

626. e. 4
Robertus: Corham: Tunc
Liber verus: Jussessor: &

¶ An introduc

tozte for to lerne to rede, to pro-
nounce, and to speake frenche
trewly, compyled for the ryghte
hygh, excellent, & moſte vertu-
ous lady, the lady Mary of
Englande, doughter to
our moſte gracious
ſouerayne lord
kyng Henry
the eight.

Quia eo



Sic & Sine



Right Breadfall

Thou

Invent



¶ For implozation of grace.

Grace of god that I loue so moche.
¶ Grace de dieu que iayme tant
 I you requie right humbly
 Je vous requier treshumblemēt
 The gifte of loue without any further
 Le don damour sans plus auant
 Of it to make any refuse
 En faire aucun refusement
 If ye do fynde in any wyse
 Se vous trouues aucuneinent
 Of me seruice, but in trouth
 De moy seruiçe quen loyaulte
 I gye you leue biterly
 Ons habandonne entierement
 To wyll at all at your wyll
 Uoulloit du tout a boullente
 Towarde me to vse of great rigour
 Uers moy vser de grant rigeur
 And me to banishe from all good hap
 Et me banir de tout bon heur
 without moze of me to haue pite.
 Sans plus de moy auoir pite.

¶ Sola salus seruire deo, sunt cetera fraudes

¶ To the lady Mary.



For the honoure of Mary
 Our lhonneur de Marye
 God daughter to saint Mary
 Filleule a saynte Marye
 Virgin and mother Iesu Christ
 Vierge et mere thesu crist
 Haue these verses ben witten
 Ont ces verse este escript:

J. li.

Ma.

Glasse
Miroir
Lennyng
Appuis
Rose
Rose
That can not vade
Inmarcessible
Amonge
Entre
For euer more
A tousio's mias

Mesure
Mesure
Lonyng
Amoureux
Redde
Knuge
ponge
Joune
Chosen
Elytes
Wey
Soiez

Shewinge
Monstrat
Fulfilled
Assouie
well smellinge
Redolente
Jolye
Jolie
Excellent
Exellente
Blyssed
Benye. Amen.



The pzologue.

Howbeit that I do not, not know how that
Ombien q̄ ne ignore point q̄ pluī
many as well lerned in good lettres
sieurs tāt qualifiez ez bōnes lectre
as also well spoken in the frenche tonge
come aussy elegāt en la langue frā
at the lest not beinge naturall and bozne of
coise (au moins pour non estre naturel et natif du
the lande and coūtrepe haue composed, and writen rules
territoire et pais) ont compoſes, & escript regles
and pzinciples for introduction in the aide tonge
et pzincipes pour introduction en la dicte langue
the whiche parauenture, as witnessed saint Hierome
lesquels peult estre come ttesmoigne sait Hierome
to Paulin haue taughte before that they haue ben conning
a Paulin ont enseignes auant q̄ auoir este scauāt
for howbeit that arte is folower of nature, folowing
Car ia soit que art soit imitatriee de nature lensui
her right nigh, yet neuerthelſſe can not she ouertake
uant de bien pzeſ, sy ne la peult elle toutescois accō
her. wherfoze the said compoſiteurs all togider lea-
ſutur. Pourquoy leſoitz cōpilateurs du tout adhe-
nyng to the ſame, ben by nature in sondry places coe-
rens a icelle ſont par nature en diuers lieux cancel
les

heb. repproued, and corrected. *Shulde it not seme a thing*
les repzis, et corriges. Ne sēbleroit ce point chose
selde and straunge, to se a frencheman endeuoir and
care et estrange, beoir vng francois se ingerer et
infoice hi selfe to teche vnto the Germanys the langage of Almayne,
efforcer dapprendre aux allemās la langue troyse
ye, and that moze ouer is, vpon the same to compile rules and
voire, & qui plus est sur Icele composer regles et
pzincipes, howbeit that against me and my reason
pzincipes, combien que (contre moy & ma raison)
some body might saye, that one shulde finde no bodye
quelq vng pouroit dire, q on ne trouueroit aine
whiche shulde teche Hebreu, Greke, nor latin, if it were
qui enseigneraut Hebreu, Grec, ne latin, sil ne loī-
nat lausfull to any body so to do, but to him whiche shulde haue it
soit a ascun de ce faire sinon a celui qui laroit de
of nature. To whome I answere that it is another thing to
nature. A quoy ie respons que cest aultre chose de
teche and instructe by the pzinciples and reules made
segner & dapprendre p les pzincipes & regles faicts
by diuers well experiz autours, by gecat space and longe
par diuers experitz aucteurs, par interualle et diu
proces of longe time well approued, than at the
turnite de long temps bien approuuez, que de pze
first meting and nat hauing a langage but meanelye
intere abordee & nauoir vng langage que moiene
and as a thyng borrowed to be wyllyng by and by,
mēt & come p empzunt, en voulloir cy pris cy mis
not onely instructe the others. but also to
non seullemēt enseigner les aultres, mais ausy cō
complye vpon the same reules certayne the whiche doyng
poser sur ce regles infallibles ce que scauoir faire
is nat graunted but to right fewe of them whiche ben bozne
nest ottroie a bien peu de ceulz qui sōt mesme natif
of the said langage, for touching my self to whome the
du dict langage, car touchāt moy mesmes a qui la
said tongue is maternall or naturelle, and whiche by
dicte langue est maternelle ou naturelle, & qui par
the space of thertyperes and moze haue besyed me, how
lespase de trente ans & plus, me suis entermis con
A.iii, bien

dest that I am right ignorant, to teache and instructe many
bien que soit tresignorant (Densegner et apprendre
great pynces and pyncesses, as to decelid of noble
pluiseurs grandz pynces et pyncesses, come a few
and recommended memoys The pynce Arthur the noble
de noble et recõmande memoire Le pynce Arthur
kyng Henry, for the present prosperously
le nobler roy Henry, pour le present prospereusmẽt
reigninge, to whome god giue life perpetuall, The ques
regnant, a qui dieu doit vie ppetuelle. Les roy-
nes of fraunce and of Scotlande, with the noble Marquis
nes de France & Descote, avec le noble Marquis
of Excestre. For the whiche thinge to fulfill I haue
Excestre. &c. Pour laquelle chose accomplir Jay
done my power and deuer to serche and seke
fait mon pouoir & debuoir de perscruter & cercher
all that whiche hath serued me to this purpose to serue, I haue
tout ce quy ma semble a ce propos seruir. Sy nay
nat neuerthelesse founde rules infallibles, because
ne toutelsois peu trouuer regles infallibles (po^r ce
that it is nat possible to finde anye suche that is to say, suche
q^l nest possible de telles les trouuer) cest a dire tel-
les whiche maye serue without any faulte, as do the ru-
les q^l puissent seruir infalliblement, coine font les re-
gles compiled for to lerne Laten, Greke, and Hebreu,
gles composees po^r apprendre Latĩ, Grec, Hebreu
and other suche langages. The whiche neuerthelesse the sayde con-
& aultres telz langages: Ce q^u neãtmoins lesditz cõ-
pilateurs haue ouertaken, to the ende that I ne say presumed to
pilateurs ont entrepris (affin q^u ne die psumes) de
do, howbeit they haue not ben but litle tyme to learne,
faire iasoit quilz naient este q^u petit de tẽps a lapy-
re, mais o^u soit ainsy q^u telz regles et enseignemẽtz
ben sufficient and ferre about my wothes
sotent tressuffisans & loing par dessus mes ceuues
because neuertheles that nowe notwithstanding myne
pource toutelsois q^u maintenant (nonobstant mon
ignorancy, I am againe by my most redoubted
ignorance) suis de rechief (par mon trestretoubte
seigneur

loyde and prince the kynge aboue named, ordeined to
seigneur & prince le roy dessus nomme) ordonne da
 administer myne accustomed pooze and unworthy service
ministre mon accoustume poure & indigne service
 to nosse illustre ryght excellent and right vertuous lady my
a treslustre trescellent & tresuertueuse dame ma-
 lady Mary of Englande his right entirely well belo
dame Mary Dengleterre sa tresetieremet bien ay-
 ued doughter, the whiche right spectally and straitly hath me
mee fille, la q̃lle tresespecialemēt & estroitement ma
 sōmaunded and encharged to reduce and to put by wrytinge
comande et encharge de reduire & mettre p̃ escript,
 the maner how I haue p̃ceded towarde her said p̃ro-
la maniere coment t̃ayp̃cedē engerslesoictz p̃ro-
 genitours and p̃decessours, as that same also by the whiche
geniteurs et p̃decessours, cōe celle aus̃sy p̃ la q̃lle
 I haue her so so taught and do teache day
(ie lay tellemēt quellemēt) instruit, & instruis iour
 ly whiche to refuse, notwithstandinge the reasons about
nellemēt Ce q̃ refuser (nonob̃stāt les raisons dessus
 saide alleged. I durst not, nor wolde not, howbeit that
dictes alleguee) no seroie ne bouldoie, cōbien que
 I am right well assured to merite more for and because of myne obe
soie tresasseure de pl̃meriter po: & cause de mō obe
 dience, than by any service or sacrifice that to her I maye
dience, q̃ par aulcū service ou sacrifice q̃ luy puisse
 do, fulfillinge her most noble and gracious comādemēt
p̃ster accōplissāt sō tresnoble & gracieuz cōmādemēt
 gracious say I, because that her beniuolence and good wyl
gracieuz dis ie po: ce q̃ la beniuolēce & bō boullōir
 to to p̃offite to others as to her selfe, wherfore
est d̃ p̃uffiter aux autres cōe a elle mesme, pourq̃.
 I supplie and require all reders the causes and reasons
le suplie & requier to: lecteurs les causes & raisōs
 aboue sayde contemplated and considered to haue me for to be ex-
dessus dictes contēpleez & cōsiderēz mauoir po: ex
 cused, and there where they shal se the good Homer haue ben a slepe
cuse & la ou ilz verront le bō Homere auoir dozm̃y
 to be willing by good maner to wake him, in coꝛrectyng
le boullōir p̃ bonne maniere esueille en coꝛrige-
 the fautes in the whiche bycause of the same is fall in
āt les fautes esquelles a cause de ce il est encouru,
 ce

the whiche doing they shall deserve nat onely to be lauded
re q̄ faillatz ilz meriterot nō seullemēt destre louez
and praised, but also in theyr workes and operations
& p̄ises, mais aussy en leurs euures & operations
taxed and esteemed of maner lyke, and to the same answering,
taxes & estimes de maniere reciproq̄ & corespōdēt
Ende of the prologue.

Here after foloweth the table of this
present treatise.

This lytel worke shalbe deuided in.ii. boos-
kes, wherof the first shal haue two partes

In the first part shalbe treated of rules, that is
to say how the fyue bowelles must be pronounced
in redyng frenche, and what letters shalbe left vn
sound, and the cause thereof.

The seconde parte shalbe of Rownes, pronow-
nes, aduerbes, participles, with verbes, p̄positi-
ons, and coniunctions.

Also certayne rules for coniugations.

Item fyue or sixe maners of cōiugattions with
one verbe.

Item coniugations with two pronownes and
with thre, and finally combining or iornynge two
verbes together.

The seconde boke shalbe of letters myssiuēs,
in prose and in ryme.

Also diuerse communications by way of dialo-
ges, to receiue a messager from the Empe-
rour the frenche kynge, or any other prince.

Also other collocations of the pp̄ietie of mete, of
loue, of peas, of warres, of the exposition of the
masse, & what mannes soule is, with the diuision
of tyme, and other conseytes.

F F F F S.

¶ A prologue for an introductory.

The thynges that directely expressed maye nat be



Les choses qui a droit exprimer ne se peu
ought to be declared by sincopation
uent doibuent estre declarees p sincopatio
of silence, by cause that by silence one doth answer
tacyturne, pur ce q par silēce ou respond
to many thynges. Sincopation is none other thing
a plusieurs choses. Sincopation nest aultre chose
but a breniation of length and prolixite is supfluite
quabzeuiation de plicite, et ppolixite est supfluite
of wordes in declaring a thyng. wherfore in
de parolles en declarant vne chose. Pour quoy en
all woikes one ought to be moite. We shal be
toutes oeuvres vn doit estre brief. Nous comence
gyne this boke than in the name of god all myghty
rons ce lyure donqs ou nom de dieu tout puissant
and shal ende it with the helpe of hym, procedyng by the couns
a lacheuerons a layde diceluy, procedant par le cō
syle of Dyace, whiche is as moite as possible shalbe,
seil Dozace, qui est le plus brief que possible sera.

¶ Here foloweth the first boke.

¶ Of seuyr rules for to rede and to pro
nunce frenche trewly.

¶ The fyrst is howe the fyue bowels, þ is to saye
a, e, i, o, & v, shalbe sounded in redyng frenche

Y E shal pnūce your a, as wyde opē mouthed
as ye can, poure e, as ye do in latyn, all most
as bode as ye pronounce pour a in english, pour
i, as sharpe as can be, o, as ye do in englische, and
v, after the skottis, as in this worde gud. These
B.i. fyue

fyue bowels be consonautes whan they receyue
not theyr full sounde, as in thys worde Jamays
the fyyste a, is a bowell & the seconde is a consonat
¶ Exemple of e, as Deite & maicste, where bothe
ees of Deite be bowels & the fyyst of Maicste is a
consonat and the seconde is a bowell. wherfore ye
shal vnderstand that the most parte of ees in freche
be consonautes, saue fewe with suche wordes as

come out of latyn. Exaple of consonantes ^{the} Me, te,
^{hym that of the do to say to put ourre pour}
se, que, de, le, faire, dire, mettre, nostre, vostre, wher
is neuer a bowell. All the ees þ shall be bowell
in this presēt boke shalbe marked as the dipthong
is in latyn, thus e.

The seconde rule.

¶ Also in redyng french ye shall leaue the last let
ter of euery worde vnsoude, endyng in s, t, and p,
saue of the same worde wher vpon ye do pause oꝝ
rest, foꝝ if ye do pꝛounce euery worde by hym selfe
that is to say: restyng vpon the same, ye ought foꝝ
to pꝛouice & soude him thowowe. And if any worde
endyng with an s, haue the next worde folowyng
begynnyng with a bowell, than shall ye soude the

said s, like az, ^{seuer others} As i these wordes Jamais aultres
ye shal rede Jamais aultre, as it were but one wor
de, But if the next worde comyng after the s, be a
consonant, than shall the said s, remayne vnsoude

^{seuer shall ye haue} as i these wordes Jamais narees, the s, of Jamais
shall nat be soude. Pꝛouided al wapes as is said
befoꝝ, that ye do nat pause noꝝ rest vpon the word
foꝝ so doyng ye must sound it partitly.

The

CThe thyrde rule.

Whan one worde doth ende with a bowel, and the next folowynge after begyn wth another, than the fyrst shalbe vnsounde, As in these wordes,

^{But in you}

Que en vous, ye shall rede quen vous, and ^{me} Je me

haue ^{I the haue I hym haue}

ay, ie te ay, ie le ay, ye shall rede Je may, ie tay, ie lay, and so of all suche lyke, excepte some wordes whiche be nat vsed in France, as Tu as, thou hast, where both bowells must be sounde, howbeit the pycardes soundit after the sayd rule, sayeng Cas for tu as, tes for tu es, thou are. And if ye fynde two

ees endynge & begynnynge a worde, ye shall leaue

^{It is with the well}

the tone, as in these wordes, Il te est bien, ye shall rede Je test bien. And of e, & a, as in these wordes, Que a, ^{but so.} ye shall rede qua. Of e, and o, as in these wordes Que on, ^{but one.} ye shall rede quon. Of a, & o, as these wordes. Pourra on ^{may one.} ye shall rede pourran, & in lyke maner of all other of that termination.

CThe fourth rule.

And s, in the begynnynge of a worde hath hys full sounde, as dothe appere by these wordes folo

^{wylde wylde}

wyng, Sage, sauage, sapient. &c. But in þ myd des beyng epyther befoze a consonant oꝝ a bowell, shall be sounded lyke a s, As in these wordes,

^{I sayd I byd I bryke I holde peace}

Disoie, falsoie, bysoie, taioie, &c.

CThe fyfth rule.

Whan st, dothe come togider in a word hauing a bowell befoze it, than the sayde s, shall remayne

B.ii. vnsounde

vnsonde, but it shall encrease the soude of the sayd
vowel, as in these wordes, ^{To wait to taste to taste} Gaster, taster, haster,

^{Wpne} ye shall, rede, Gaater, taater, staater. And ^{hoote} Mon
^{come agayne anon,} hoote reuenes tantost. ye shall rede, Mon hoote re

uenes tantoot, ye shall neuertheles except al those

that be nyghe the latyn, as ^{To protest} protestester, manifestester,
^{to withstande,} contrestester, & suche lyke, whiche must

haue the sayd f, well parfitly sounded & pronoun-
ced, for it is not possyble to fynde a rule so general
and infalpyble to serue for euery word, as was sayd
aboue in the prologue.

¶ The sixt rule

¶ There is in frenche diuers wordes, whiche for
denotation or signification of pluralite dothe eue
wyth ang, or with as, for without the same they
be synguler nombze, as these wordes & suche lyke,

^{worde} Mot, ^{fyfte} puing, ^{wyfte} escript, ^{a lefe} feullet, whiche be all singu-
ler nombzes, & if ye do adde a z, at the latter eue of

them, than are they plurell nombzes, as Motz
puingz, escriptz, feulletz, & than shall ye not soude

the letter befoze the sayd z, redyng Motz, puingz,
feulles. And lyke wyse whan a worde hath a p, or

b, in the myddes endyng the syllable, ye shal leaue
them vnsonde, as in these wordes en suche lyke

^{Deuoite dette to wytte} Deuoit, debte, escripze, ye shall rede Dauoit, det,
escrete. But whan they do begyn the worde or the

syllable, than shall they be pronouncd, as these
^{Putte away debated to byke,} wordes, Deboute, debatū, debysier, &c.

There

There is two maner of wordes harde for to be
 pronounced in frech. The fyrste is writte with a dou-
 ble ll, whiche must be souned together, as lla, lle,
 lly, llo, llu. as in these wordes ^{same} Bailla, ^{ruste} tailla, ^{gades} cuelle,
^{leaf} feulle, ^{bayly} bally, ^{sayle} fally, ^{nette} mouller, ^{hinde} engenouller, ^{a tynier hammer} mallot,
^{full of leanes} feullu, houllu. The secounde maner harde to pro-
 nounce ben written wyth gn, befoze a vowell. As
 Gna, gne, gni, gno, gnu, As in these wordes.
^{wan} Gaigna, ^{dyd bled} Saigna, ^{lyne} Aigne, ^{combe} Digne, ^{wyne} Uigne, ^{scabe} Cigne,
^{felowe} Compaigne, ^{swell} Aaigne, ^{wanton} Mignō, ^{wanton} Mignarde, ye shall
 except many wordes that be so written & not so pro-
 nounced, endyng especially in e, as ^{worthy} Digne, ^{swanne} Cigne,
 Magnanime, hyshe cozege, &c. They that can pro-
 nouce these wordes in latyn after de Italians ma-
 ner, as, Agnus, dignus, magnus, magnanimus,
 haue bothe the vnderstandyng & the pronoucyng
 of the sayde rule and of the wordes, ye shall fynde
 many suche among the nouns, verbes, & aduer-
 bes, that hereafter be folowynge, the whiche shall
 haue the double l, thus written ll, besyde the word
 and gn, besyde the tother.

The names of mēbres lōgyng to mā-
 nes body aswel inwarde as outwarde

^{The head or chyfe} **L**e chief ^{The scull} **L**a teste

^{The heeres} **L**es cheueulx
B.iii **L**es

Womenheares	The nether cheakes	The hole of the necke
Les tresches	Les baioes	La fosse du col
The bushe	The eares	The hnel of the necke
La cheuesure	Lozeille	Le canol du col
The perwyle	The eares	The Molder
La perrucq	Les ozeilles	Lespaule
The heares	The mouth	The armes
La cheuechall	La bouche	Les bras
The forked	Beastes mouth	The elbow
Le front	La geule	Le coude
The temples	The lippes	The elbowes
Les temples	Les leures	Les coudes
The browes	The tonge	The spise
Les sourcilz	La langue	Le puing
The visage	the rouf of the mouth	The spises
Le visage	Le palais	Les puins
The berde	Or	The hande
La barbe	Du palet	La main
The face	The teeth	The handes
Le biaire	Les dentz	Les mains
The face	The gommies	The bac of the hande
La face	Les genciues	Le dos dela mai
The eye or eyes	The lawes	The ball of the hande
Louel	Les machoires	La paulme
The eyes	The inward lawes	The balles
Les yeulx	Les mādiballes	Les paulmes
The lydde	The chynne	The fpynger
La paulpiere	Le menton	Le doigt
The lyddes	The throte boole	The fpyngers
Les paulpieres	Le gosier	Les doigts
The ball of the eye	The gorge	The toombe
La pupille	La gargate	Le pulce
The nose	The gorge	The thombes
Le naes	La gorge	Les pulces
The nose thelles	The necke	The tointe
Les narilles	Le col	La toincte
The chekes	The knot of the necke	The toynies
Les toeg	Le neu du col	Les tointes

The

The nasse
Longle
The nappes
Les ongles
The brest
La poitrine
The fozke of the brest
La fourcelle
The breste
La mamelle
The brestes
Les mamelles
The body
Le corps
The waist
Le fauz du corps
The holes vnder the ar
Les esselles (mez)
The help
Le ventre
The napp
Le nombz
The backe
Le dos
The chyne
Le eschine
The rayns
Les rains
The buttoches
Les fesses
The buttoche
La fesse
The hippe
La hanche
The hppes
Les hanches
The gynes
Les aines

The nether beche
La penilliere
The thighe
La cuisse
The thyghes
Les cuisses
The knee
Le genoull
The knees
Les genouls
The hamme
Le iaret
The hammes
Les iaretz
The legge
La iambe
The legges
Les iambes
The chyne boone
La greue
oz the backe of
Du le dos de
The legge
La iambe
The calke of the legge
Le pomeau
The ancle
Il La cheuille
The ancles
Il Les cheuilles
The heile
Le talon
The foote
Le pied
The feres
Les piedz
The back of the foote
Le doz du pied

The soole
La plante
The sooles
Les plantes
The great too
Le grant oxeil
The toes
Les oxeils
¶ The inward
membres
The brayne
Le cerueau
The herpyng
Loupe
The syghe
La veue
The smellyng
Lolfact
The smellyng
Le flairer
The taste
Le goust
The sclynge
Le taste
The chawpyng
Le macer
The swalowpyng
Lauailer
The heart
Le ceur
The stomake
Lestomac
The galle
Le feil
The leuer
Le foie

The

The lyuer
Le gisser
 The longe
Le poulme
 The mylke
Lesplene
 Of the mylke
Du la rate
 Of mylke
Du ratelle
 The bledder
La vessye
 The kydneyes
gn Les cognōz
 The veyne
Lurpne
 The guttes
Les boiaulz
 The small guttes
Les intestins
 shiward pd of p hely
Il Lesz étrailles
 The gader
La cozee
 The blode
Le sang
 The collet
La collere
 The melancoly
La melancolie
 The fleame
Le flegme
 The senewes
Les nerfz
 The veynes
Les baines
 the veynes of p puls
Les arteres
 The pulse
Le pulse

The rybbes
Les costes
 The bones
Les os
 The byrthe
La laine
 The spitell
La salive
 The spyttyng
Le craschat

**Other names
beyng in man.**

The soule
Lame
 The spyte
Lesperit
 The wytte
Le seng
 The wyll
Le voulloir
 The wyll
La volunte
 The reason
La raison
 The memory
La memoste
 The vnderstandyng
Lentendement
 The thought
La pensee
 The ymaginacion
Lymagynatio
 The iugement
Le iugement
 The oppinion
Lopinyon
 The romahe
Le corage

The hardinesse
La hardiessc
 The cowardnesse
La couardise
 Febleness of corage
La lachete
 The fears
La peur
 The truthe
La verite
 The leaspng
La mesonge
 The dyede
La crainte
 The ferefulnesse
Lespouâtemēt
 The strength
La force
 The febleness
La foiblesse
 The mansuetude
Le debōairete
 The agreful dispositiō
La felonie
 The malice
La malpce
 The cruelnesse
La crualte
 The goodnesse
La bonte
 The frowardnesse
La mauualtie
 The peace
La paix
 The rest
Le repos
 The trouble
Le trouble
 The labour
Il Le traual

The stedfastnesse
Le constance
The vntstedfastnesse
La variablete
The hatred
La hayne
The frendship
Lamitie
The loye
La toye
The sorow
La tristesse
The heuynesse
Lennuy
The reioysing
Le reioyssemēt
The angre
Le corous
The spoyte
Lesbatement
The wyath
Lirc
The payence
La patience
The pyde
Lorgeul
The mekenesse
Lhumilite
The enuy
Lenuye
The charyte
La charite
The diligence
La diligence
The lytell corage
la plusslanimitē
The glotonie
La glotonie
The sobernesse
La sobyete

Recherp
Luxure
The chastite
La chastete
Loneytise
Couuoitise
Liberalitye
Liberalite
Duarpe
Auarice
waste
Prodigalite
To go about rycheffe
Ambicion
wylfull pouerte
volūtare pou,
Boostyng
La vantage
Presumptuous
Larrogance
The truthe in lpyng
La pseudonne
The falsched
La faulcete
The lyfe.
La vie
The berthe
La mort
The youthe
La ieunesse
The age
Il La viellesse
The ignorance
Lignorance
The wylsome
La sagesse
The byrth
La neissance
The chyldhode
Lenfance

The feblenesse
La debilitē
The manhood
La verilite
The foulnesse
La turptude
The howe
Lhonestete
The insulency
Linsolence
The stableness
La fermetē
The bondage
La seruitude
The fredome
La liberte
The honours
Lhonneur
The shame
La honte
The rycheffe
La richesse
The nedynes
La pourete
The sikenes
La maladie
The helth
La sante
The pouerte
Lindigence
The plente
La plente
The plenty
Labundance
The niggardnes
La chicete
The rudenes
La rudesse
The swiftnes
La pꝛopritude
C.i. La

The inclination
La propension
Facile inclination
La proclinite
The desyre to slepe
La soupissement
The quycheneste
La viuacite
The graunt
Lottroy
The denyng
Le deniement
The beate
La challeur
The coldnesse
La froydure
The drynesse
La seicheur
The moistnesse
Lhumidite
The laughynge
Le rire
The wepyng
Le plourer
The complaynyng
Le playndre
The lamentynge
Le lamenter
The verpyng
Le sanglouter
The neesynge
Lesternuer
The snowynge
Le rouflet
The syghynge
Le souper et
syghes
Le soupirs
The yrrynges
Les sanglous

The spytting
Le cracher
To blowe the nose
Le moucher
The slepyng
Le dormir
The watchynge
Le veillier
The slepe
Le sompne
The dreamynge
Le songer
The dymnyng
Le boire
The eatynge
Le menger
The saayre
Le saoul
The hungry
Le familleus

The names of
womēs remētes

The smocke
Le chemisse
The colee
Le colet
The sleues
Les manches
The gussettes
Le goucerons
The surfylls
Les ourletz
The seames
Les coustures
The hyrtell
Le corset
The hyrtell
La cotelette

The petticoate
La cote simple
The gowne
La robbe
The placharde
Le placart
The cusses
Les bonbardes
The purfyll
La bordure
The lynyng
La doublure
The furre
La fourrure
The vnder gyrdell
Le demp chain
The gyrdell
La chainture
The purse
La bourse
The pynease
Lespinceau
or the case for pynease
Ou les spéglier
The heed ataype
Lattour
The frenche hode
Le chapperon a
plis
The bonette
Le bonnet
The crispynes
Les crespines
The frōtlet of belu
Il les beatilles
The templetes
Les templettes
The partelce
Le gorgias

La

The necke hercher

La colerette

The hercher

Le ceurechief

The patolet

Le colet

The parletelet

Le colter

The bzacelet

Le bzacelet

The cache

Lesgrappe

The rynges

Les aneaulz

The owche

La bague (cher

to close the neck her-

Il Le fermall

A hiarhe

Afficque

An Image

Limage

The gabardine

La gauardine

The rypet

La cornette

The cloke

Le manteau

The bone grace

Le moufflet

The knyves

Les coutteaus

The beedes

les patenostres

The hande hercher

Lesmouchail

The hande hercher

Du mouchoir

The lace

La lacz

The smale lace

Le lacet

The combe

Le pigne

The lye

La lessine

The gloves

Les gantz

The tymbale

Le does

The nydel

Il Lcsguille

The pyntes

Les elpingles

The brushe to

La verge a

les espouffettes

swepe

Esterdze

The hooles

Les chausses

The garters

Les iartiers

The pynton howes

Les eschapins

The howes

Les solies

The buskyns

les bzousiquis

The clippars

Les patouffles

The Mercs

Les forces

The small Mercs

Du forcettes

¶ Mens remēt

The Mercs

La chemisse

The doublet

Le pourpoint

The coute

Le seon oz sap

The iacquere

La iaquete

The iacquere

Le hicqueton

The gowne

La robe

The parletelet

Le colet

The hat

Le chapiau

Lappe of man

Lo tocque

The rappe

Le bonnet

The hooke

Le chaperon

The girdel

La chainture

The sword

Lespee

The spanische sword

La rapiere

The dagger

La dague

The bagge

La gibessiere

The purse

La lquiere

The purse

Laulmontre

The bootes

Les botes

The bootes

Les houseaus

The spozen

Les esperons

C.ii. Le

The mylde
 Lescu
 The paure
 La parme
 Agriat bucler
 La taloche
 The buccer
 Le buclier
 The camell
 Le camiau
 The dromadary
 le dromadaire
 The asse
 Lasne
 The hoyle
 Le chival
 and all bestes
 & toutes bestes
 traing sadyls
 portant selles
 or fardels
 ou fardeau
 or paches
 ou voiture
 haue nede
 ont mestier
 of pache sadyls or of
 de batz ou de
 sadyls, the whiche
 selles, lesqelles
 haue a pommel
 a pon meau
 backe and bowch
 dos & archons
 suryngles
 surfangles
 and pannels
 et paneaus
 then the herd
 Puis la testie

Halle, reyne, and
 re, resne, et
 byres, make the
 mors font la
 byrdell
 Bide
 The petrell
 Le poittal
 The gythes
 Les sengles
 The strappes
 Les siries
 The strapp ledgers
 Les estruieres
 The crouper
 La croupiere
 The bristles
 Les boucles
 and the nales
 Et les clous
 that one can not
 quon ne peult
 make noz forge
 Faire ne forger
 without the anuple
 sang lenclume
 The stile the
 Le lyme le
 hammer
 Martaeu
 The pynettes
 Il Les tenapilles
 The coles
 Les charbons
 with the spye
 avec le feu
 spye, water, and
 Aite, eaue, et
 erthe, with the
 Terre avec le

Smyth
 Marechall
 or locker
 ou serrurier
 The chabze
 The bedde
 Le lict
 The bolster
 Le trauersin
 or the bolster
 Ou le chaue
 The pyllowes
 Il les oreilliers
 The blankettes
 Les blanceetz
 The shetes
 Les linceulz
 The couerlette
 Le couuertois
 The sparue
 Le ciel
 The sparner
 Il Le paillon
 The courtyns
 Les courtines
 The hangyng
 La tapisserie
 The carpettes
 les tapis velus
 The quytthens
 Les carriaus
 all one
 Les coissins
 The bedde portatys
 Le lict de camp
 The bedstede
 Le chalcet
 The borde
 La table

Les

The trestles
Les trestiaus
 The forme
Le banc
 The chappes
Les chateres
 The stiles
Les escabelles
 The foote stiole
Le marcepied
 The table cloth
La nape
 The naphyns
Les ferutetes
 The salt
Le sel
 The salt saler
La saliere
 The chafynge dyshe
La chauffete
 The spones
Il les cuillieres
 The trenchers
Les trenchoirs
 The platters
Les platx
 The dysches
Les escuelles
 The sawcers
Les saucieres
 The bzed
Le pain
 The fleche
La cher
 The butter
Le beurre
 The chese
Le fromage
 The egges
Les eufz

The whyte wyne
Le vin blanc
 The claret
Le claret
 The rede darke
Il Le vermeill
 The wyne red
Le vin rouge
 ppocras
ppocras
 The wassers
Les oblies
 The succades
La succad
 The confittes
La dragerie
 The confectins
Les confitures
 The cup bozde
Le buffet
 The pottes
Les potz
 The flagons
Les flagons
 The couppes
Les couppes
 The boles
Les tasses
 agnal nãe for cuppes
Les hanape
 The gobeletes
Les gobeletz
 The glasses
Les boires
 and the water
et leau
 for to washe them
pour les rincer
 The bacin
Le bacin

The cwee
Lesquiere
 The kechin.
 The mayster roke
Le sommeleir
 The poman roke
Les cuisiniers
 Gromes of the kechi
Marletz d'cuisi
 Carne broches
Les galopins
 The pottes
Les potz
 The pannes
Les poelles
 The chaudrons
Les chaudrons
 The spyrtes
Les hasties
 The spyrtes
Les broches
 The morters
Les morters
 The pestils
Les pestiaus
 The series
Les tamis
 The Ramels
Les estamines
 p iller mēt for to larde
Le lardeur
 The bacon
Le lard
 The mustarde
La moustarde
 The grythe saure
La sausse verde
 The gamton
Le ian bon
C.iii.

The befe
Le beuf
The bull
Le toz
The cowe
La vache
The calfe, veile
Le beau
The muton
Le mouton
The holder
L'espoule
The pygot, a best
Le gigot
The chyne
L'eschine
The rybbes
Les costes
The necke
Le colet
The trotters
Les trotins
The lambe
gn Lagneau
The heed
La teste
The garde or nobles
La couree
The skynne
La piau
The ramme
Le belin
The ewe
La byebis
The he gotte
Le bouc
The she gotte
La chteuure
The swyne or hogge
Le pourceau

The booz
La verrart
The booz
le ver
The wyld booz
Le senglier
The cowe
la trupe
The pygge
Le cochon

Haukes of pray
lyrtene kyndes

The Eagle
L'aigne
Gerfacon
Gerfaul
The tercel
Gerk
Sacres
Sacres
The tercell
Sacrety
Falcon
Faulcons
The tercell
Tierceletz
Lenners
Lainers
Laneretes
Laneretz
Meryllons
Il Elmerillons
Hobbys
Hobzaus
Gowaukes
Austours
Tercels
Tierceletz

Ouerhaukes
Esparuiers
Busarties
L'ouchet
Tercels
Cretreulles
The thynke
Mauluis
The cocowe
coucou
Locowe
Coucou
Glede
Hallans
Buttorches
Escoufles
The blew kyte
Faulz pcedyter
Biffardes
Busartz
The water buffarde
Buhiers
Greater then the
Uoultoures
The duke oule
Le duc chahuā
The oule
Le chahuan
The lytell oule
La chouette
The raupn
Le corbiau
The crowe
La cornaille
The high wale
L'esper
The nuthatche
Le picmars
The dawne
La caue

Le

The pye
La pie
The pye
La gace
The aye
Le iap
The henne
La poulle
The henne
Legeline
The chekyns
Les poucins
The cocke
Le coc
The capon
Le chappon
The partyphe
La perdyis
The yon partypches
Les pertriaus
The felaunt
Le faisan
The doue
Le coulomb
The rpyged doue
Le ramier
The Roche doue
Le creuset
The turtle doue
La tourtelle
The pygions
Les pygeons
The comozande
Le comozain
The wodcocke
Le becasse
The quayle
La quaille
The lark
La louette

The plouuer
Le pluuer
The lapwng
Le baniau
The crane
La grue
The bustarde
Lautarde
The pecoche
Le paon
The swanne
Le signe
The goole
Louoye
wyld
souuage
tame
domenche
The barnacle
Le barnacle
The gander
Le Jar
The gossynges
Les oisons
The heyon
Le heron
The Monier
Le trublet
The gret
Latgret
The bytous
Le buto
The stork
La cigoin
The malarde
Le malart
The malarde
Le canart
The duche
La canne

The ducks
Lanette
The ducklyng
Les anuetons
The coote
La Foudelle
The coote
La Blarie
The teyle
Le cercelle
The starlyng
Lestourneau
The star
Lesprouhon
The feldefar
La griue
The osyl
Le merle
The sparawe
Le passereau
The sparawe
Lemoisson
The fynche
Le pinchō
The blew back a rede
La piousse
The wagtaile
La bergierōnet
The wagtaile
Le hochecul
The grene fynche
Le frion
The grene fynche
La verdiere
The gold fynche
La cardinotte
The lymet
La linotte
The coldmoufe
La melleonge
La

The nyghengale
gu le rossignol
Aobyn redbyck
La robaitll
The wyenne
Le rotelet

Cfrutes
Cherys
Cherisis
Small cherys
Guingues
Great cherys
Gascognes
Small cherys
Merises

Cornes

Sorbes
Walpyle
Francboises
Goleberrys
Grosselles
Strawberys
Freses
Apples
Dommes
Iderys
Doires
Blummes
Dunes
Dampsons
Dunes de
damas

Deches
Deshes
Walberys
Moures

Melons
Melons
Gourdes
Gourdes
Coubumbers
cucombres
Granades
Grenades
Orenges
Orenges
Openarles
Melles
Medlers
Neffles

Chestayns
Chatangnes
walnottes
Nois
fylberdes
Nois franches
Small nottes
Noisettes

Cwhyt meates
Custardes
Darioles
Flawnes
Flans
Cartes
Cartes
Pastys
Pastes
frytters
Brignes

Cheneson
The harte
CLe cerf
The hynde
La biche

The burke
Le dain
The doe
La daine
The robucke
Le saillant
The robucke
La Capyeolle
The robucke
Le cheurtau
The hare
Le leure
The warte
Le leurart
The conys
Les cornis
The rabettes
Les lapriaus
The rabettes
Les lapins

Cfythes
A lose oz madder
CAllofes
Eles
Il Anguilles
whelkes
Balames
Bacbyls
Barbeus
Bale
Bars
Breames
Bresmes
Pykes
Broctz
Carpes
Carpes
Haddockes
Cableaus

Applers thombs
Caboceaus
 Ronges
Congres
 Coclis
Cocques
 Crabbes
Crabbes
 Dagge fylche
Ehten de mer
 Cheapys
Cheuennes
 Chympes
Creuettes
 Poypaſſe
Daulphin
 Sturgeons
Esturgeons
 Smeltes
Espelans
 Erenyce dean douce
Escreuice
 Coiene
Gougeons
 Erenyce of the ſee
Houmars
 Whyte her yng
Harenc bland
 Redd her yng
Harenc ſoz
 Lampreys
Lampreies
 Loches
Loches
 Mackerell
Maccreaus
 Muſhels
Moules
 Whytynges
Melans

Mallettes
Muletz
 The ſee ſwyme
Marſoun
 Myſters
Mutres
 Perches
Perces
 Plaiſe
Plais
 Rap or thornebacke
Rapes
 Roches
Roches
 Ruſſes
Rouſſettes
 Rochettes
Rougetz
 Salmones
Saulmons
 Solles
Solles
 Conyne
Coninnes
 Tenches
Tences
 Gournardes
Tumbes
 Troutes
Treute
 Turbottes
Turbot
 Menews
Uerron
 Uendoife
U Trees
 The almande
Amandier

Cheldee
Bulne
 Hau thorne beas
Aubespyn pur
 ryng the beerys
tant curelles
 Wodde ſymler
Bois fuſt
 Cymber ſewell
Matrie laigne
 faggottes
facea⁹ fagotz
 Logges
Buches
 Ryndglynge fagottes
Bourre ez
 Barberis
Barberis
 Boſe
Buis
 Heyth
Buiterz
 Buſhes
Buiſſons
 Byrche
Bouill
 A place full of haſels
Couldrieres
 Haſell
Couldze
 Cheſtayne tree
chataignier
 Chery tree
Cherifier
 Honſocke tree
Ciebzou
 All one
Chieurefeul
 Tyller of a croſſbowe
Cornier

D.1. Coz

Cornus	Gowsebery tre	Aple tre
Il Cornellier	Groisselier	Pommiers
ohe	berynge	Blomme tre
chesnes	portant	Potriers
A roynes	Grenade tre	Peere tre
Glands	Browme	Pruniers
Lipe tre	Genisters	Peche tre
Cipres	The poche tre	Peschiers
Quyne aple tre	Gaiacs ou eba	Wnaple tre
Conigz	holp o: holme	Pins
Walnier	houll	Plane
Datiers	Ine	Planes
Waples	perre	Popla tre
Errables	Jenoper	Poupeliers
Thornes blacke	Jenopure	Rosiers
Espines noire	Ewe	Rosiers
And whyte	Ill	Reeres
Et blanche	Firres o: goss	Rouces
Englentine	Jongniarins	Rosmarpe
Esglentier	ou rauenelles	Rosmarins
Biche o: the tre	The bay tre	Frys
Fou ou hat	Laurier	Sapins
that beareth	More berry tree	the place of wylowes
tre qui porte	Mourier	Saussoie
the mast	Medler	Wylowes
Foynes	Mellier	Saus
Fygge tre	Opyners tree	Serues tres
Figuer	Riffler	Seruiers
Ralpis tre	Wallnot tre	Elder tre
Francboisier	Noier	Sehuc
Whe	Hafels	Alpes
Fresne	Rosiers	Trembles
Smal chery tre	Olyue tre	Crone a lytell tre
Guinguer	Oliufers	Trosne
The same agayne	Wylows o: osiers	Vynes
Badeolier	Oliers	Vignes
Wylde cheeps	Orange tre	Loynes
Merisier	Orengters	Bledz
Great chery tre	Elms	Whette
Gascongner	Durmes	Fourment

Seigle

Eye
Seigle
Daruell
Juraie
All one
Jargerie
All one of 35 any
Dore
Dores
Quaine
Barley
Oge
Beanes
Febues
Peeces
Pois
Great peeces
Cices
Smale peeces
Il Lentilles
Small beanes
Lupins
All one
Lobis
Ryse
Rifz
Ferche
Uelche
Hempe fede
Canebutse
Lyne fede
Linnup
Rape fede
Daulette
Mustarde fede
Senneuc
Strawe
Estrain
Strawe of hay
Feurre

Appl
Appl

Hey
Foyr
Lyttre of chaft
Baille
Beale strawe
Delas
Dele
Farine
Bianne
Tercon
All one
Son
Crowgh
Mayt
Paste
Paste
To knede
Pestric
Ouen
Four
To put in the ouen
Enfourner
Whpte
Blanc
Blache
Biede
Bain
Bis
Browne
Brun

**Names of of
ficers regalles**

The great master
Le grad maister
The rewarde
Le mast dhostel
The great chamberlin
Le chambrier
The seconde
Le chamberlain

The cuppe beare
Le echanson
The seuer
Le pannetier
Sergeantes officers
Le sommelier
Walter of horses
Le grat escuter
The squier vnder him
Lescuier deschart
The great hower
Le grat beneur
The master of hawks
grat faulconner
The mas. of the foreste
Le verdier
The see
La mer
Of the see
La marinne
Of fise in the maseull
Marin
The ryde
Maree
Sprunge
Sourion
Sprunge
Sourse
Foutayne
Fontaine
Riuier
Riuere
The Hawke
Blue
A furde
Le gue
The poole
Le biuere
The great poole
Lestant

D.ii. La

The hole
 La folle
 The doches
 Les fosses
 The byrke
 Le rieu
 The broke or chenell
 Le ruisseau
 Le rerne
 Citerne
 A myppe
 Naure
 A barge
 Ref
 A myppe bote
 Scaffie
 A lytell bote
 Racelle
 A ferry bote
 Bac
 A square bote
 Bacquet
 A lytell barge
 chalau
 all one
 Santine
 A whery
 Cymbe
 Co luche floche
 A tel aumaille
 Duche Mepherde
 Tel bergier
 of shepe
 de bzebis
 floche of gotes
 vng d chieures
 trope of ky nne
 an.
 De baches

of marcs
 Documentz
 Roud of Malons
 Ha- destalons
 ra. of colics
 de poulaiz
 Propertes
 of beestes.
 A man dorhe syng
 Ung hōme chā
 An asse
 vne asne recāe
 A cowe lowe
 vne bach mu.
 A shepe blete
 vne bzebis besle
 A wolfe and a
 vng loup & vng
 dogge houles
 chien hulēt
 The cat and the lyon
 Le cat et le lion
 geyneth
 groulent
 A hogge
 Ung pourceau
 groneth
 grongne
 A cho: le hōmeth
 vng villain
 o: grudgeth
 hongne
 A dogge barketh
 vng chiē abate
 A fore and
 Ung renart et
 an otter panteth
 vng puto is gla
 (tissent)

The serpentes by the
 les serps sible
 The bydes
 les oiseaux
 rars
 and charereth
 gonēt & degoisēt
 The man is well
 Lhōme est bien
 Maped, that hath the
 fourme, qui a le
 tronche ryght, and the
 tronc droit, et le
 remenant lyke
 tige semblable
 Longe
 Long Longue
 Shorte
 Court Courte
 Biefe
 Bief, Biefe
 Great
 Grant Grande
 Croose
 Gros Grosse
 Diminutive
 Groset Grosse
 Small o: slender
 Gresse
 Fatte
 Gras Grasse
 Thynne
 Delie tenuene
 Small
 Menu Menue
 Thicke
 Espes Espelle
 Thicke o: rype
 Dru
 Dru
 Ryght
 Legter Legiere
 Pesant

Deup	Desant Desato	Dwets	Douls Doulce	Dyaz	Menfongier
Holowe		Dyter			
Creu Creuse		Amer	Amere		Menfongiere
Hole ou lounde		Dyter ness		Jolier	
Entier Entiere		Amertime		Bourdeur	
Solude		le			
Massif massi.		Dz	Dz	Bourderesse	
Direpht		foule		Beglier	
Estroit estrote		Sal	Salle	Trompeur	
Large		Spotted			
Large largeur		souille souillce		Tromperesse	
pnough		Wyllayne		Jangler	
Plente		villain villaine		Carqueteur	
All one		Lrauer			
Drou		Truad truade		Cacquetresse	
Plentye		Begger		Reprover	
Foufon		Belitre belitrese		Ramponeur	
Enough		Lepre			
Alles		Douacre infect		Ramponeresse	
Ynoughe lytell		hnaue		hoze monger	
Alles pou		coquin coquine		Paillard	
All one		Begger		hoze	
Alles petit		kemad kemade		Paillard	
Comoch		Boy	Gyle	hoze monger	
Trop		Garcon Garce		Ribauld	
hoze	Less	Boy	Gyle	hoze	
Plus Moins		hardeau harde		Ribaulde	
Argarde		Flotton		hoze monger	
Escar		Gourmand		Dutier	
				hoze	
Escarle		Gourmande		Dutain	
hoze		Malapert		Baude	
Mol Molle		Cocard cocarde		Macreau	
harde		Lphitrous			
Dur Dure		friand friande		Macquerelle	
		Wanton		thefe	
Dur et Durette		mignō mignart		Laron	
Lpar		Wanton woman		thefe	
meteur metresse		Mignarde		Laronesse	
				D.iii. Saul	

Chalutatyds in frenche: whiche may be tourned two maner ways
as whan ye saye in Englyshe, God gyue you good mojoue, ye may
say, Good mojoue gyue you god: as ye shall se here folowynge

		Good mojoue	
		bon iour	
		Good yere	
		bon an	
		Good eueryng	
		ben vespre	
		Good eyen	
		bon soie	
		Good nyght	
		bonne nuyt	
		Good metynge	
		bon encontie	
		Good soye	
		bon loie	
		Good lyfe and longe	
		bonne vie et longe	
		Good fortune	
		bonne fortune	
God	me	Good prosperite and to you him	me
Witu	the	bonne prosperite Et a vous Ray	the
	the	Well to prospere	the
	Te	bien prosperer	Te
	him gyue	Good lucke	gyue god
	Luy doint	bon heur	doint dieu
	vs	Good begynnyng	vs
	Nous	bon commencement	Nous
	You	Good meane	You
	Nous	bon moien	Nous
	them	Good ende, a well to fynishe	them
	Leurs	bon fin, ou bien acheuer	Leurs
		Well to lyue, well to dye	
		bien viure, bien mourir	
		Good helthe	
		bonne sante	
		Paradyse at the ende	
		paradis en la fin	
		The hole, or the fulfylling of your desyes	
		Le tier, ou l'accomplissement de vos desirs.	

God kepe, God blesse, God saue, God gyde you,
Dieu gart, Dieu benie, Dieu sauue, dieu vous conduye,

Dieu

god be within, god be your helpe, god be thyllunge to helpe you
 Dieu soit ceans, Dieu vous soit en aide, Dieu vous veuille aide,
 god kepe you from yuell and trouble. I bidde you farwell,
 Dieu vous garde de mal et decombier. A dieu vous dis
 god be with you, I take my leaue of you, farwell tyll we se agayne.
 Adieu loiez, adieu sans adieu, adieu iusques au reuoir

The generation of colours, with the blason of them,



Colours is lyght incorporate in a
Couleur est lumiere incoporee en vng
 body visyble, pure and clene. There ben two dyf-
 ferspectif, pur et nect. Ilz sont deux dif-
 ference of perspectue, the one is pure sepa-
 ference de pspectifs, lung est pur sepa-
 rate of cethlynesse, and the tother is spotted by the same
 re de terrestrite, et lautre est coinquie par icelle
 and myxed lyght is deuyded in four pces, that is to say,
 et mixtion e lumiere est quadrapartite, cest a dire,
 clere, darke plenusous or scant, whiche is to be vnderstande
 clere, obscure, habundate et rare, qui est a entendre
 great or small. Wherefore it appereth that the
 grande ou petite. Pourquoy il appert que trois
 thynges dothe cause the essence of whynesse, that is to say,
 choses causent lessence de blancheur, cest a scauoir
 clerenesse with habundance of the same, and a body visyble clene &
 clarte avec multitude dicelle, & vng pspectif pur &
 pure. And the thynges lykenesse ben cause of
 nect. Et trois choses semblablement sont cause de
 blacke colour, it is to say, lyght, darke with
 couleur noir, cest a scauoir, lumiere, obscure, avec
 scarlnesse of it, and perspectue-viciene. And by this is
 paucite dicelle, et perspectif impur. Et par ce est
 open the sayeng of Aristotle, and of Averrois, whiche hane
 esclarcy le dict Daril otel, et de Averrois, qui ont
 put blacknesse for priuation, and whynesse for
 mis noyeteur pour priuation, et blancheur pour
 habi-

habitude or forme. And knowe ye, that in these two co-
 habitude ou forme. Et sachez quen ces deux coul-
 leurs l'yeux all the others.
 leurs gisent toutes les aultres.

ournage

Deul

Chenelle

Humilite

Virde

Oyeul

Rouge

Amoureux

Stedfast

Constant

Cyle

Deception

Fatygation

Werynes

Possession

Jouissance

Hoore

Esperance

Purple

Pourpule

Blody colour

Sanguin

Eyolete

Violet

Floure of peche tree

Fleur d' pester

Carnation

Changeable

Changeant

Pale

Passe

Dead

colour

Couleur morte Cher de cheual

Blache

Noir

White

Blanc

Red

Rouge

Green

Verd

Blue

Bleu

Dark blue

Pers

Tawny

Taun

Gray

Jaune

Gris

Mageste

Cherite

Trahison

Disimulation

Dark colour

Obscur

Pale

Blesme

Wound

Rich

Cher de cheual

Sable

Argent

Opaler

Seule

Sinople

Assure

Dark colour

Obscur

Pale

Blesme

Wound

Rich

Cher de cheual

Dark colour

Obscur

Pale

Blesme

Wound

Rich

Cher de cheual

Dark colour

Obscur

Pale

Blesme

Wound

Rich

Cher de cheual

Dark colour

Obscur

Pale

Blesme

Wound

Rich

Cher de cheual

Dark colour

Obscur

Here

Chere foloweth dyuers resons wyth some stra-
ge woꝝdes, foꝝ introduction of the
frenche tonge

Dut sette the heaynesse of slepe bayn
Oys mis lentoinmissent du somme bain
and longe, a quyet slepe is right
et long, vng faisible doꝝmir est tres-
necessary and delycious.
necessaire et delictieus.

A man douifull and suspect of felons, is some con-
uerted and tourned in suerte.
Ung hōme doubteus et supecōneus est tost cō-
uertu et tourne en cusancon.

A man alreedy like warme in deedly hete, kyndled
Hōme desia tiède en moꝝtelle challeur, embzase
of angre and madde of dyspayre.
de coꝝus et foꝝsenç de dçsespoir.

A goodly lady, meke, teꝝmed, courteyse, Da
Dame gaillarde, benigne, cointe courtoise, de-
moiselle Redfast, simple, chaste, gamefast, and honest.
moiselle cōstant, simple, chaste, pudicq, et honeste.

A woman dishonest, redy to call, gamelefe, wanton
Fēme impudicq, lubꝝique, affrontçe, megnarde
subyle paynted, and discreynable.
affaitçe, fardçe, rusçe

A gyll haupng laughng eyes, full of swete
Une garce atant peulr riantz plains de douly
promyse, bearyng wytnesse of a wanton wyll
promettre, faisant foy dung boullotr feminin.

He is worthy of prayse, whiche enloꝝeth him to gete
Il est digne de louenge, qui senfoꝝce dacquerer
by vertus greater lyght. foꝝ of it to sparle
par vertu plus haulte lucence, pour en espanye
the beames through all the woꝝlde.
les rais par tout le monde.

It is folly to set our trust in thynges whiche shall fall
Cest folie de nous fier ez choses qui cheront,
lythe that we knowe selfely, the souerayne lyghte
puīs que cognoissons nets, les souueraines resples
C.i. Dis

neffes to be darked of a lyght cloude,
differeurs estre obscurcies d'une legiere nuée.

^{of} fortune, ^{joyous} encreasynge, and ^{flourishing} flouoryng

Cfortune doulleur aggrauant, et soupyssant
^{all} delices with great blame a body by a ly
touts delices, A grant toyt vne psonne par vng pe
^{tell} immoderate colere, doth angre him selfe agaynst his frende,
tit de colere immodere se tudigne contre son amy,
^{at} the lest without a faulte goyng befoze.
au moins, sans pzealable offence.

^{It is shame to a noble person with his strenght to}

Cest honte a vne noble psonne selon sa foze ob
^{scarke} his honour by his shame.
scurcir son honneur par ses hontes

^{If the humayn, inclination, whiche is wont for the most}

Cse lhumaine propesion, qui scult pour la plu-
^{pie} to refuse that, which one to hi doth minstre for most nes
spart refuser, ce quon luy administre pour plus ne
^{cessary, is not somewhat} restrayned, scante malbe
cessair, nest aulcunement cohibee, a paine pourra
^{able, in any} serence to profyte.
en aulcune science prouffiter.

^{we} be right mygh cleuyng, the one to the o-

Cous sommes de pzesadheretes les vng des aul-
^{ther,} bycause of naturall inclination, specially bes
ters, a cause de naturelle procliuite, signament ai-
^{myng} symilprude of maners togyder
antz confirmite de meurs ensemble

^{Those whiche by dignities ben} helwed as

Ceuulz qui par dignites sont pze eminence p des-
^{houc} others, ought to then sample of god, to put downe
sus les aulters, deueroient selon dieu rabaisier
^{their} pride and highnesse.
leur crestes et haultesses

^{To do the contrary is an infortunate accident} spyrus

Cfaire au contraire est vng fortuit accident pro-
^{pyng} of malyce, and yeldyng a man right dult.
cedant de malyce, et rendant vng home fort empoz
^{wherfore} for nat to be gainfayeg, a refusyng good
Pourquoy pour non estre restif et oppugnant bo
conseil

counsaile, It is farre better to sayne a good que-
 conseil, trop mieulx vault soubstenir bonne que-
 relle, than to vnder him selfe in such trouble.
 telle, que de soy rendre en telle berelle.

Pronounes deuyned by the sixe articles of de-
 clination, both synguler and plurel nombze. And
 these that ende in a, As ma, ta, sa, la, ben all femi-
 nyn. And all those that dothe ende in on, and in e,
 As mon, ton, son, me, te, se, le, ben all masculyne,
 and mien, tien, sien, synguler nombze & masculyn,
 miens, tiens, siens, mes, tes, ses, plurell nombze
 and masculyn. Mienne, tienne, sienne, syngulere
 Miennes, tiennes, siennes, plurell nombze and fe-
 minyn. But there ben certayne names of the femy-
 nyn, whiche do requyre the pronounes masculins
 that must be excepted, as Mon ame, Mon hotelle
 and such lyke, where both a me, and hotelle ben fe-
 minyn gender, and mon masculyn. And me, te, se,

ben indifferent, as in these wordes. Il(elle) me dit,
 He(he)sayth to me
 Il(elle) te dit, He(he)sayth to the: He(he)sayth to hi.

Il(elle) se dit, where me, te, se, serue
 I, of me,
 bothe for the masculyn and femynin. Je, de moy,

to me, at me, O me, for me, to me, of
 A moy, A me a moy, O moy, Pour moy, a moy, de
 me Our we, ours, of ours,
 moy. Plurell, Nos, nous, nostres, les nostres,
 to us, by our, for Thou

A nous, par nos, O nous, o nos, pour nous. Tu
 of the, to the, by the, O thou, by the
 de toy, a toy. Par te, par toy. O tu, o toy, par toy.

Plurell. Vos, vous, les vres. A vous, par vos
 O ye, By you, He, he, he, him, that same,

O vous. Pour vous, Il, elle, cil, luy, celui, celle
 C.ii, icelle

^{the same,} ^{that same, that or this.} ^{They, they.}
Icele, icelly, Cestuy, Ceste. ^{Alz, ceulx, elles,}
^{them, those.} ^{What, howe, which, the which}
celles, icelles, eulz, iceulz. ^{Que, qui, quel, lequel,}
^{of whome, to haue, by whome} ^{the whiche,}
laquelle, de qui, a qui, par quel quelz, laquelle,
^{myr,} ^{myne,} ^{Comy,} ^{of my, myne,}
lesquelles. ^{Mon, mien.} ^{A mon, de mon, mien}
^{foz me, foz my. foz myne,}
Pour me, pour mon. ^{Pour le mien, par le mien}
^{O my, o myne.} ^{foz me foz myne, foz}
O mon, o my, o mien, Pour me, pour mien, pour
^{plurall nombre} ^{thy, my}
mon. ^{Mes, miens.} ^{Mienne, miennes.} ^{Ta ma}
^{his, thy, my, his, thyne, myne, his,}
sa, Tes, mes, ses, Tiens, miens, siens, Miennes
Tiennes, Siennes. ^{Example for the femynin.}
Ma mere, ma seur, ma maistresse, ma cousine,
Ta mere, ta seur, ta maistresse, ta cousine,
Sa mere, sa seur, sa maistresse, sa cousine,
La mere, la seur, la maistresse, la cousine.
Example howe the pnowne masculyne shalbe
applyed, as Mon pere, mon frere, mon maistre,
mon cousin, Ton pere, ton frere, ton maistre, ton
cousin. Son pere, son frere, son maistre, son cou
sin, Le pere le frere, le maistre, le cousin. ^{And}
mes, tes, ses, les, foz bothe plurell.

Also there be two pnownes, that ben pnowo
^{The same and that}
red in frêch by syncopation, as Cestuy cy, et cestuy
^{same: for the femynine.}
la. Cesty cy et ceste la. ^{Where ye shal take but the}
^{last syllable of them, sayeng} ^{Stuicy, stula, stecy,}
stela.

Prepositions.

^{Forthe, nreth, towards: towards} ^{foz, by}
Pres, ioncte. Enuers, deuers. ^{Pour, par}
^{up, downe, above, vnder: afore, before, as}
Sus, ius, dessus, dessoubz, Auant, deuant con-
tre

gaynē,
tre, encontre.

with, to, to the, of the, of, at this syde, beyonde
Auec, a, au, du, de, deca, dela.

Coniunctions. ^{If.} ^{If.} ^{and.}
Sy, Se, Et, &c.

Here foloweth the aduerbes, and howe ye shall
turne a forme an aduerbe from Englyshe in to fren
che, and specially those that signifie qualities, ta
kyng this syllable ly, from them, and addyng mēt
foz it, as in these wordes folowynge.

Propze

all thys daye

Not longe agone

Parfaite

Mesuy

Nagaires

Honeste

In thys day

But lytell agone

Habūdant

Au iourdhy

de puis nagares

Cozdial

Yester daye

lytel

Prompte

Hier

petit

Incessante

Befoze yester day

With

lytel

Real

Aunt hier

De puis

pou

Instante

The iother day

lytel

Due

Lautre hier

peu

Cōmue

Comozowe

Of

time

Signant

mēt Demain

De temps

Cōpetence

ly The day after

Anone

Reuerente

Lendemain

Cost

Decente

After to mozoowe

Anone oz some

Couarde

Apres demain

Tantost

Loial

from hence forth

Incontinent

Cōdicionale

Desormais

Incontinent

Cōpendeuse

Ones agayne

By and by

Other aduer

Derechief

Cy pris cy mis

bes in generall.

from hence forth

Rowe

Thys pere

Dozenauāt

Maitenāt

by

This day

from hence forth

vp

Thy

Dicy enauant

lus

from hence forwarde

Rowe here

De la enauant

Oze ca

Thys pere

there

Duan

la

All this pere

pere while

Mesouan

Ozains

C.iii.

Ades

Nowe
Ades
At this tyme
At this heure
At this tyme
Adis
Come
Temps ^{past} fut
Then
Lors
From then
Dellors
At that tyme
Alors
For that tyme
Dourlours
For all that
Toute fois
Alwayes
Touteuoyes
Many tymes
Maintefois
Of tymes
Souuentefois
At sometyme
A la fois
Many tymes
Plusieurs fois
Betyme
Par fois
Sometyme
Aulcunnefois
In the meane tyme
Endementiers
Duryng the tyme
Entandes
Whyle it was
Tandis
Alwayes
Toudis

Euer
Cousiours
Neuer
Jamais
For euer
A iamaiz
Neuer synce
Onques puis
Neuer moze
Onques mais
Then
Donques
At that tyme
Adonques
Alredy
Desia
Unto this
Jusques cy
Unto that
Jusques la
Moche
Moult
Ryght of most
Tres
In maner
De manier
In so moche
Entant
In the meane whyle
Entretant
Duryng that tyme
Ce pendāt
Of maner
De sorte
In maner
En sorte
In a facyon
Enfachon
Of facyon
De fachon

In such wyse
Tellement
As it was
Quellement
Almost
Quasly
Pot withstandynge
Nonobstant
Worthstandynge
Obstant
Not withstandynge
Non pourtant
Not neuertheless
Non pourquāt
Neuertheless
Neant mains
How be it
Combien
All be it
Ja soit
As
Comme
Howe, & howe moche
Comment
What
Quoy
To what
A quoy
Of what
De quoy
In what
En quoy
For what
Pourquoy
Upon what
Sur quoy
As what
Come quoy
Selfely
Mesmement
Long

Farre
Loing
A longe while
Longuement
More late
Plus tard
To soone or tymele
Trop tempze

CAduerbes of
swerpnyng

I. so
Coup, sy
No, Ray
Non, Nemy
In earnest
A certes
For earnest
Pour certes
Of certain
De certes
In certaine
A certain
For certaine
Pour certain
Of certayne
De certain
Certainly
Certainement
In truth
En verite
In sothe
En Bray
For true
Pour verite
For sothe
Pour Bray
Of true
De verite

Of sothe
De Bray
Crewly
Urapement
Veritably
Veritablement
I my god
En mon dieu
In good lucke

En bon omen
By the fayth of
Par la foy de
fayze women

Belles femes
I you assure
Je vous assure
I promysse you
Je vo^s pmetz
I certifie you

Je vous certifie
Without any faul
Sauns faulte
In my truth

En ma verite
In my loyaltie
En ma loyaulte
In my worthynesse
en ma prudence
By my holynesse

Par ma saictete
Crewman
Pseudhōme
Crewwoman
Pseudefēme
rare

Alincots Ansy
Othertwys
Aultrement
Also
Aussy

Quickely
Vitement
Goodly
Bonnemēt
Betyme
Tempze
Cymely
Tempzement
Early

Matin
At the pyck of the day
Au poit du iour

The dawig of the day
a laube du iour
At the dayeng
Ala iourner

At the cockes crowing
Au chāt du coc
At prime
A prime

At troyde houre
Aheute d tierce
At noone
A none

At myddeday
A mydy
At eynlonge
A vespere

At euenyng
Au soir
Betwene light & darke
eter chie & loup

At the sonne settinge
a soleil couchāt
At the nyght
A la nuyt

At myddnyght
A minuyt
At the day
Au iour.

Aduer.

CAduerbes of nombres, with their diriuatyues,
where the longest of two beynge lyke, is for the fe-
mynne, and the tother masculine, and bothe of
one signification. (.. ..)

CUnge

i.

CTiers tierce

thyrde tierce=

CEmpzeut, premier,

ly, the thyrde
mēt, troisieme, Ternite,

Primiermēt. Unge, vne, ternil triangle triplicite

vnic, vnicque, vniemēt triple tertiane tripartit.

Unge, vnion, vnte, vnte=

CQuatre

iiii.

ment, vntte, vniuocq. eq
uocque, Seul seulle,
seullement, seullet seul
lette, solitaire.

CQuart quarte Qua-
trtesme quartermēt Qua-
ternite, Quadzil quarre
quarree, Quadzangle,
quadzuple, Quaresoure,

CDeur

ii.

CDeusieme. Second

CQuartaine quarataine

seconde. Double double quadzagesime quaresime

doublee. Duplctitē dupli-
cite, doublement, secon-
dement, bipartit.

CCinq

v.

CQuint quinte quin-
temēt. Cinquiesme, quin-
tuplice, Cincquesme.

CTrois

iii.

Si

C Six. vi. Douze. xii.

The syxte sixtely.

C Sixt, sixte, sixtemet,

Of syxe sixe coznaerde.

Septil, sextangle, sili-

me, Sexagesime.

Twelfthly

C Douzieme, douziane,

Tratse xiii

The thyrtyenth

C Traisieme.

Sept. vii.

The seuenth

seuenth

C Septiesme, septies-

ly, ones seuyn in se.

mement, septaine, septu-

upn, seuyn comes.

plice, septangle, septua-

gesime.

Quartorse.

xiiii.

The fourteenth.

C Quartozieme.

Quinse.

xv.

The fiftenth.

C Quinzieme.

Saize.

xvi.

The sixtenth

C Saisieme.

Huit viii

The eyght

C Huitaine, huitieme

eyghly.

huitiesmement:

Dixsept

xvii.

The leuententh.

C Dixseptiesme.

Neuf. ix.

The nynt

nyne

Neuuesme, neuuay

nynthly.

ne, neuuesmement.

Dixhuit

xviii.

The eyghtenth

C Dixhuitiesme.

Dix x.

Tenne

C Dix, desiesme, desint-

to he that hath charge of. x. men

et, disdayne.

Vingt

xx.

Twenty the twentieth

C Vintaine, vigtiesme.

One xi.

The onenth.

C Onsieme onsaime.

Trente.

xxx.

The thyrtyeth

thyrtye.

C Tretiesme. tretaine.

f. Qua

Quarante xl.

The fourteth

CQuarantieme,

Cinquante l.

Accomptis of fifty

CCinquantieme, cinc-

the fifteth.

quantieme.

Soixante lx.

The sixteth

CSoixantieme, soixan-

tye

taine.

Septante lxx.

The seventeth

CSeptantieme

Octante lxxx.

The eighteth

COctantieme

Nonante xc.

The nynteth

Cnonantieme

Cent

C

hundredth the hundredth

CCentaine, centieme

the hundredth lxxviii

centenier, centurion.

CDeus cens. **CC**

Trois cens **CCC**

Quatre centz **CCCC**

Cinc centz v.c.

Six centz vi.c.

Sept centz vii.c.

Huit centz viii.c.

neuf centz ix.c.

Mil. a thousande

Dix mille x.M.

Cent mille c.M.

Un million: M.M.

CFormation of the indicatpue present tense.

CHereafter foloweth the maner, howe one shall make and fourme the presente of the Indic-
catpue or shewynge mode, of the
verbes folowynge.

The



Che maner to fourme the pzeſent of the verbes infinitiue mode, here after ſolowynge is, That all thoſe that ende in er, puttyng the r, away, and makynge the e, a conſonant, ye ſhal haue the pzeſent of the indicatiue, as in theſe wordes. Parler, Appeller, Appaiſer, Appuier. &c. Puttyng r. away, ye haue, Parle, appelle, appaiſe, appuie, ſaieng. Jappelle tu appelle, il appelle. Nous appellons, vous appeles, ilz appellent. Ye ſhall neuertheleſſe excepte ſome verbes defectiues, as aller that do make, Je voy, tu vas in the pzeſente, and ſuche lyke,

Alſo all ſuche as haue d, in the laſte ſyllable, ye ſhall leaue al the letters comynge after the d, and ſhall adde s, oꝝ z, to it, ye ſhall haue the plurell nōbre of them, as in theſe wordes. Cordze, moꝝdze, Pꝛendze, Attaindze, Auaindze, and ſuch lyke, puttyng s, oꝝ z, to the d, ye ſhall haue. Cordz, Moꝝdz, Pꝛendz, Attainz, Auaindz, Howebeit that ye ſhall not ſounde the ſaide d, accoꝝdyng to the ſixte rule in the begynning of this worke.

Alſo all thoſe that doth ende in ir, as Tenir, venir, with all them that be deriuate of the, as Contenir, Maintenir, Subſtenir, Deuenir, Reuenir, Paruenir, Deuenir, and ſuche lyke, muſt be all ended in iens, as Tiens, viens, Cōtiens, maintiens, ſubſtiens, puiēs, Reuiēs, puiens, deuiēs, ſaienge, Je tiens, tu tiens, il tient. Noꝝ tenons, voꝝ tenes, ilz tiennent. There is another ſozte endinge in ir as Cōuertir, Aſſoupir, Appourir, Attendir, Venir, Bannir. &c. The whiche chaungynge the r, in s, ye haue Conuertis, aſſoupis, appouris, benis, bannis, ſayeng. Je bannis, tu bannis, il ban-

nist. Nous bannissons, vous banissez, ilz bannissent. And likewise of the tothers: Also there must, be many excepte, as Consentir, assentir, mouir querir, dormir, which do make their present. Je consens, ie assens, ie meurs, ie quiers, ie dors, tu dors, il dort. Nous dormons, vous dormez, ilz dorment. Also there is two other that doth ende in oir, the tone hath an a, in the penultyme syllable, as Avoir, and scavoir, which do make ay, and scay, in the present. The tother maner hath lyke termination withoute an a, as Appercevoir, de- voir, pourvoir, concevoir, decevoir, which do make their presente Japercoy, ie doy, ie pouruoy, ie concoy, ie decoy, howbeit, Valloir and volloir, must be except which do meke in the pset Je vaulz an vouloit, ie veulz, tu veulz, il veult, Nous voulons, vous voulez, ilz veulent.

Also there is another sorte endinge in e, in the ^{sayeng, laughing, reding, fricng,} infinitiue, as Dire, rire, lire, fire. &c. which ma- ^{saye, laugh, ride, f. pr.}

ke in their present. Dis, ris, lis, fris. sayenge Je lis, tu lis, il list. Nous lisons, vous lisez, ilz lisent.

Also there ben others endinge in oze, as Cloze, Mitte, with all his compost, that is to say, Discloze vnMitte. Forcloze, Mitte out. &c. which do make in their present, Clos, declos, forclos. &c. And for cause that rules ben infinites, & that they be moze necessary for the teacher than for the lerner. I suppose that those aboue saide ben sufficient for the indicatyue present. It is to be noted that i the freche tonge is but two conjugations. The fyrst shal be discerned and knowe by the first person plurell nom-

nombre of the present in the shewynge moode, for
 where the said fyrst persone hath no s in the second
 syllable before his terminatiō or ende, thā is it of the
 first, as i these ^{we loue,} ^{we haue,} ^{we better,} ^{we giue,} ^{we hope,} ^{we holde peace}
 verbes, aymons, auons, batōs, donōs
 with such lyke. And where there is an s beginnige
 the last syllable of the foresaide fyrst person, than it
 is of the second, as in these verbes, ^{we backe} Baisons, ^{we do,} taisons
^{we saye,} ^{we rede,} ^{we thynke}
 basons, faisons, disons, lisons, pensons. &c.

We shal note lykewise that i the indicatiue mode
 ye haue for the moste parte, foure pterites, & is to
 say, the Imparfet, perfect, & indiffinitive with the
 plusperfect, whiche ben communely founde in all
 verbes saue i the that ben defectiues, as it apereth
 by this verbe, ^{I saye,} Je dis, ^{thou sayest.} tu dis, wherefore the pterit
 imparfite is. ^{I dyd say} Je disoie. ^{I sayde} The perf. Je deis. ^{I haue saide} The
 infinitiue, ^{I had sayde} Jay dit. The plusperfect. Jauoy dit.
 Neuertheles for the most part there is no differēce
 in Englyshe betwene the perf. and imperf. that is
 to saye, betwene ^{I dyd say} Je dyd say, and ^{I said} Je said, but because
 it is otherwise i frenche, I must vse the said differēce

Of the formation of the pterit impf.

We shal forme the pterit impf. in all verbes of
 both cōiugations by the first pson plurel nombre,
 turning this syllable ons, which is in euery verbe
 in oie, for the first coniugation, & sōs in soie, in the
 seconde soundynge s. lyke a 3. os 3ons, 3oie.

J.iii. Exam

Exāple for the first coniugation as i this verbe
aymons, whiche is the fyrst person plurel nombꝛe
of J aime, chaungynge this sillable ones, in oie, ye
haue amoie, of auons, ye haue auoie, of Donnons
Donnoie. Example for the seconde coniugation
as in these worde, Baisons, turninge the last spilla
ble, whiche is sons in soie, ye haue of Baisons bzi
soie, of Faisons faisoie, of Disons disoie; and the
second person shall termine in ois, the thirde in oit
The fyrst plurel nombꝛe in ions, for the fyrste, and
sons, for the seconde, as it shall appeare clerelye in
the coniugations hereafter folowynge, and thys
rule is intallyble for all pꝛeterite imparfytte.

Of the pꝛeterit parfite.

The pꝛeterit parfytte, as well of the fyrste as of
the seconde coniugation hath diuers terminatiōs
but there is four speciall, that is to say in us, in is
in ins and in ay. Example of us, as Je bus, ie
fus, ie leus, ie cogneus. &c. Of is, as Je escriptuis,
ie deis, ie mus, ie feis. Of ins, as Je tins ie prins,
ie vins, iapꝛins. Of pa, as J aimay, ie donnay, ie
batay, ie pꝛisay, ie laissay. And so the Verbe that
ende in us, halbe Je bus, tu bus, il but Nous bu
mest vous butes, ilz burent. Of is, as Je feis, il fe
ist, nous fismes, vous feistes ilz firent. Of ins, as
Je vins, tu vins, il vint, nous vunmes, vous vin
tes, ilz vindꝛent. Of ay, as ie Donnay, tu donnas,
il doonna. Nous donasmes, vous donnastes, ilz
donnerent.

The pꝛeterit indiffinitive,

We shall euer fourme the pꝛeterit indiffinitive
wꝛth

wyth the thre persons, both singuler and plurel nō
b:es of this verbe (haue) in the present tensis, say-
inge, J'ay ayme, J'haue loued, Tu as ayme, thou
hast loued, il a ayme, nous auons, vous aues ilz
ont ayme. And lykewile of all other verbes with
the said haue, as J'ay dit, iay bu, iay lu, iay fait.

COf the founation the p:eter plusqf.

The p:eterpt most perfect is euer formed wyth
the p:eterpt imparfyt of the foresayd verbe (haue)
as the indiffynitpue is wyth the present sayeng J'
haue done, thou haddest done, that is to say J'auoi
dit, i'auoie aune, i'auoie bus, i'auoie requis. And
so thow the thre persons, neuer chaungynge the
termination of the verbe, as J'auoi dit, tu auois
dit il auoit dit. Nous auions dit, vous auies dit
ilz auoient dit. And so of all other lyke.

CThe futer of the indicatiue.

Ye shall vnderstand, that all maner verbes in
generall ben termined in their thre persons syn-
guler and plurel nōbers after this wayes, J'ay, ras
ra, rons res ront, so that ye shall take the verbe in
the present, and put the s awaye at the later end, if
it be of the second or the fyrst conjugations, & adde
thereto the foresaid termination, as in this worde
Dis, J'aye. ye shall take awaye s, and adde ray.
sayenge Diray, diras, dira, Dirons, direz, diront.
J'atineray, tu atineras, il atinera. nous atine-
rons, vous atinerez, ilz atineront. There be some
verbes must haue moze addition, as doys, J'slepe
whiche must haue mi, added vnto it, sayenge do-
miray, and Boy, dyne, which signifye J'dynke,
ye shall

ye shal nat say boiray, but buueray, I shal drinke
And so of soine other, as Doy, ought, and Metre
I put, how be it they be all terminated w the aboue
sayd termination.

**¶ Of the imperatiue, whiche signi-
fyeth commaundyng.**

¶ The imperatiue for the most parte is euer lyke
the verbe present tensis of the indicatiue moode,
leauynge the first pson and putting the pronow-
ne after the verbe, for it differs nat, saue in þ third
persone singuler, and plurell nombze of some ver-
bes, as Jay, whiche doth make in the thirde pson
synguler, il a, and the thyrde persone of the impe-
ratiue is, quil apt, oz oz apt cil, ou celuy, and lyke-
wyle of scay. But of the moost part of others, it is
lyke the present, leauyng the fyrst personne, which
is nat in the imperatiue singuler nombze, as in this
verbe J aime, tu aime, il aime. Nous aimons, vo-
us aimez, ilz aiment, whiche is presenttens is that is
a lyke in the imperatiue, leauinge the fyrste per-
sone, saienge Aime tu, aime cil, aimōs nous, aimez
vous: quilz aiment, puttyng euer the pronowne af-
ter the verbe.

¶ The saide Imperatyue hath two futures, the
tōne affirmatiue and the tother negatyue, whiche
haue euermoze these frēche wordz goig befoze eue-

Do *kepe* *se.*
ry person. *Faitz: garde voy,* as in this example.
Moy que tu parle. Garde quil ne se mouue

Se that thou speke. *Loke* that he moue nat. *Dze-*
nons garde, que nous ne mouuons, que vous ne
mouues. *Dzenes* garde, quilz ne se mouuent, and
likewise of the affirmatiue, leauing this worde ne

¶

The optatiue.

After the olde gramer was wonte to be all one with his preterit imperf. But we shall make hym different from him, puttyng befoze the verbe thys worde *Oh*, o: *Je vous prie*. *Sa pence Oh que ie boiue*, *Je te prie que*, *Tu boiue* &c.

The sayd optatyue hath thye preterites, that is to say, *Impere*. *Parfyte*, and *Plusperf*. puttynge alwaye *Ama boullente*, o: *Plust a dieu* befoze the verbe. The preterit imperf. is moost terminated in *usse*, *in se*, and *in asse*, whyche maye serue lykewyse fo: the present, as in these verbes. *Pleust a dieu q iaimasse*. *Ama boullente, que tu me congneusse*.

Pleust a dieu que tu prinse courage. The parfyte is moche lyke the preterit indiffinitue of the indicatiue, as *Ama boullente, q iaie aime*. The plusperfyt hath euer thys verbe *Jeusse* (*I had*) befoze hym, as *Jeusse aime, ieusse dit* &c. His presente doth serue fo: his future, addyng either *Tantost* o: *demain*, sayeng: *Pleust a dieu, q ie voise demain, avec vous, Ama boullète que deuiegne bon, Ama boullente, quil soit tantost corrige*.

The subiunctiue o: coniunctiue.

The cōiunctiue is lyke the optatiue in his present & preterites, saue that we say in stede of *pleust a dieu, ama boullente*, *Sy*, *cōme*, *quant*, o: *veu*, sayeng fo: the present, *Sy ie fuisse maintenant*, *Cōme iay congneu*, *Quant ieusse, sentu*.

The sayd cōiunctiue hath two futures, the tone hath alwayes this worde *mais*, goyng befoze the verbe, as *Mais que ie soie ioteulz* &c.

The tother is borrowed of the potentiall mode, &

G hath

hath for his termination, *Roy, rois, roit. Rions*
ries, roient, as J'aimeroie, tu aimerois, ilz aime-
roit. Nous aimerions, vous aimeriez, ilz aime-
rient, and lyke wyse of al others. The termination
of the infinitiue shall appere in the verbes here af-
ter folowynge, whertore in eschewynge pluite, I wyl
no further speake of it. The pterit must euer haue
this verbe infinitiue moode, Auoit, before hym
as Auoit parle, auoit dit, auoit mordez &c.

The Gerundive is formed of the infinitiue, and
of the participle presentis, as *De parler, pour*
conferer, en comunicant &c. The ouerthrowen
or supins whiche ben called Reuerfes, ye shal euer
put the pterit parfit or the secōde futur of the cō-
iunctiue before him, sayeng, *Je te voullisse, or ie te*
vould, ie bien aime de dieu &c.

A rule for to make participles, aduerbes
and nownes of the ver-
bes folowynge

A maner verbes infinitiue mode ending
in er, takynge the r away ye haue the pre-
terit masculin, & addynge an e to the e
that remaine, ye haue the participle femy-
nin of the pterit tensis, as in this verbe, enseigner
take awaye the r, ye haue enseigne, which is mascu-
lin, & addynge another e to it, ye haue enseigne,
which is the pterit feminin, sooldynge the fyrste e
as a vouel, & yf ye adde ment to it, ye shal haue en-
seignement, which is an aduerbe, & puttyng bothe
es away & addynge ant, ye haue the participle pfit,
which is enseignāt, & this rule is generall for, that
ter-

termination. **A**lso al verbes ending in it, as **Ue**
nir, & such as come of him must al chage it in u for
the pterit masculyn, & adding an e to the saide u for
the feminin. Exemple for the masculin, yf ye take
it away fro **Uenir**, **tenir**, **souuenir**, **soubstenir**, **mai-**
tenir, and adde u for it, ye shall haue, **Uenu**, **tenu**,
souuenu, **maintenu**, and addyng an e to it, ye shall
haue the feminin, whiche be, **Uenuie**, **tenue**, **souue-**
nue, **maintenuie** &c. And yf ye put away the sayde u
and e, and put ant for it, ye shall haue the partici-
ple present tensis, as **Uenant**, **tenant**, **souuenant**,
maintenant. There ben other verbes endyng in
it, whiche must chaunge ther in e for the feminin,
and without the e for the masculin, as **Benir**, take
away the r, ye haue **Beny**, whiche is pterit mas-
culin, and adde an e to it, ye haue **Benie**, whiche
is the feminin, and lykewyse of **Banir**, **banni**, **ban-**
nir. **Raui**, **raue**, and addyng **ssant** to the mascu-
lin, ye haue **Hanissant**, **benissant**, **Raissant**, **Mou-**
rir and **querir** must be excepted. For **Mourir**
hath moxt for his masculyn, and moxt for the fe-
minin, and **Querir**, **quis**, and **quise**. **Mourant** &
querant for the participle present tense

Also those wherof the infinitiue termine oz ende
in tre, oz in dre, the e beyng a consonant, as **Ba-**
tre, **abatre**, **Combatre**, **Rabatre**, **Debatre**, **Pen-**
dre, **fendre**, **deffendre**. **Tendre**, **Rendre**, **Uendre**,
must all chaunge re in u for the masculyn, sayenge
Batu **abatu** **Cobatu**, **Pedu**, **fendu**, **deffendu**, **vedu**
tondu addyng an e to it for the feminin, sayenge,
Batie, **vedue**, **fendue**, **todie**, ye must except **predre**
with al his deriuatiues, that mak pris pris, repris
repris, **Compis**, **Compise**, **Mespris**, **mesprise**.

There ben other that ende in e, as **P**ectre, wyth
all that of him ben diryuate, whiche muste folowe
the sayde rule, as **P**ermis permise, **M**is mise, **D**e-
mis demise, **C**omis counse, **P**romis promise, **R**e-
mis remse, **C**ompis ac. And bycause they be no-
ted for the most parte among the Cataloge of ver-
bes, and howe ye shal fourme lykewyse both now-
nes and aduerbes. And also that it is harde for to
fynde a rule generall and infallible, I do here ter-
myne the sayd rules.

There after foloweth some verbes after the
letters of the **A, b, c.**

A,

To cast downe

Abattre

To barke

Abaier

To stoupe

Abaissier

To arape

Abillier

To bourde

Abozder

To water

Abzurer

To make a sole or best

Abestir

To abuse

Abusier

To leane the backe

Adosier

To destroye

Abolir

To make swete

Adoulce

To dysse or to order

Addouber

To warne

Adnertir

To towche

Adeser

To auowe

Aduouer

To tyme or to adde

Adiouter

To swere

Adiurer

To go out of the way

Adirer

To clyppe

Accoller

To pacysse

Accoyser

To tyme a woman

Achesmer

To agre

Accozyder

To a quent

Accoynter

To gader

Accumuler

to bow down, croked

Accroper

To accept

Accopter

To bpe

Acheter

To herken

Accoupter

To certifye

Acerteuier

to cathe with a hoke

Acrocher

To directe

Adrecer

To mynistre

Administrer

To order at pleasure

Affaiter

Affoller

To make one lame

Affoller

To make sharpe

Affiller

To put on a mantle

Affubler

To make fast

Affycher

To make feble

Affoybler

To make free

Affranchir

To dresse

Agencer

To fache with a hoke

Aggripper

To make moze greu

Aggrauer

To eache

Aggriper

To knie

Agenouller

To flater

Alechier

To cherishe

Aloser

To gadce

Amafter

To wappe

Amalotter

To eye

Amarer

To wake

Ambuler

To leade

Aniener

To meude

Amender

To loue

Aimer

To make lesse

Amaindre

To make soft

Amollir

To make leane

Amesgrir

To make smale

Amenuiser

To heape

Amonceler

To dye

Adurer

To arnat or prepare

Adourer

To gyue sucke

Alliater

To kndel

Allumer

To alter

Alterer

To waste

Anuller

To announce

Anoncer

To appere

Apparoistre

To pacify

Apaiser

To apatel

Apareiller

To call

Appeller

To perceyue

Appercepuoir

To make redy

Apprester

To learne

Apprender

To flater with mythe

Aploudir

To approche

Approcher

To wate poore

Apourir

To tame

Aprouiser

To appoynt

Apointer

To leane vpon

Appuir

To go before

Anticiper

To make propre

Approprier

To assemble

Assembler

To assigne

Assigner

To assure

Assurer

To kyl with a clobbe

Assommer

To fulfyll

Assouir

To make one bounde

Asseruir

To asloyle

Assouldre

To make sadde

Assoupir

To invade

Assailir

To consent

assentir

To flatter

Assatir

To make to sweare

Assermenter

To make subget

Assubgetter

To resemble
Assimuler
To tal in company
Associer
To helpe
Assister
To sette a man
Arrestier
To enquire one
Aratlonner
To come o: to lande
Arriver
To ronde o: go about
Arondir
To water o: spele wat
Arrouser
To fall in the cōpany
Arouter
To rpe
Atacher
To tary o: abyde
Ariende
To dyesse
Atourner
To cathe subtilly
Attraper
To hysc o: overtake
Attainder
To reche
Auainde
To take hede
Auiser
To go about
Autronner
To auance
Auancer
To hane
Auoir
To gyue auctoryte
Auctoriser

To lomen
Adiourner
To dawed
Adourner
To leoparde
Adouenturer
To swallow o: go dōe
Aualler

B

To bete
Battre
To buylde
Baatic
To cast butt vpon tost
Bastir
To banyshe
Bannir
To baste the rost
Basser
To stampe
Bassier
To hyffe
Basser
To moche
Bauer
To barre a doze
Barrer
To barter
Bareter
To gape
Beere

To gape

Il Bassier

To blote

Il Barbouller

To bable like a duche

Barbouter

To pley the fole

Baguenauder

To brate at arg
Bacculer
To make a swerde
Bandid
To byrwe
Basser
To bragge
Bagner
To Rutte
Begguer
To ere lpe a gotte
Bouter
To brawle o: wage
Bansler
To rocke the cradel
Bercher
To hunte beres
Berler
To blisse
Bentir
To hagge
Belistrer
To bourde o: lape
Boudet
To barhe
Baigner
To put
Boutter
To rpe o: wrpe
Baire
To bycke
Bysier
To speake fayne
Blandir
To iuste
Behourder
To bargayne
Barguiner
To blame
Blasmer

To swere
Blasphemer
 To prece
ll Ballier
 To bable
ll Babiller
 To swrpe
Balier
 To stute
Balbuter
 To lvspe
Besguer
 To haue
Barbier
 To blasonne
Blaslonner
 To dypnke
Boite
 To ente gredele
Biffer
 To spyngge
Bourioner
 To budde
Bouttonne
 To set a broche
Brocher
 To bydel
Bider
 To worke
Besongner
 To blot
Bouller
 To bybe
Biber
 To hurte
Blesser
 To serhe oꝝ boyle
Boullonner
 To delue
Bescher

To tourne awaye
Bestourner
 To dounse
Balloger
 To cutte bushes
Buiffonner
 To burne
Bzuller
 To stute
Bzettonner
 To bymythe
Bzunier

C

To play at cardes
Carder
 To tryple
Cabasser
 To hyde
Casser
 To byke
Casser
 To hunte
Chasser
 To spyte
Cracer
 To shap breade
Chapler
 To clatter
Caqueter
 To cle
Chaunceler
 To make
Canceler
 To rickel
Catoullers
 To dounse
caroler
 To cloute shoes
Carler

To charme
Charmer
 To hewe
Charpenter
 To carle
Charter
 To put on hoses
Chausser
 To casse oꝝ warme
Chauffer
 To charge
Charger
 To do reuerence
Chap:oner
 To ouercharge
cräuenter
 To cherythe
Cherit
 To thysse
Cheut
 To gader
Ceuillier
 To certisy
Certifiser
 To walke
Cheminer
 To somme
Citer
 To tame
Cicurer
 To take ryght awaye
Ciffres
 To clepme
Clamer
 To hit
Cloze
 To halte
Clocer
 To couer
courist

Con

To guyde
Conduire
To knowe
Congnoistre
To runne
Courir
To counsell
Conseller
To runne together
Concourrir
To correcte
Corriger
To speake together
Conferer
To situate
Colloquer
To stoape
Coistir
To constrayne
Cohercer
To reduce narrowly
Coarter
To confounde
Confoundre
To go about
Costoier
To compasse
Bompasser
To naye
Clouer
To contrieue
Controuuer
To helpe
Chiennier
To turne to a purpose
conuertir
To reken
Compter
To comprehend
Compzender

To stryue
Contendre
To make
Composer
To compile
Compiler
To discerne
Concerner
To hepe
Conseruer
To comaunde
Comander
To fortifye
Corrobozer
To constrayne
Contraindre
To graunt
Consentir
To suste
comporter
To forgyue
Condonner
To conceyue
Concepuoir
As liker throw a cloth
Coler
To corrupte or corrupt
Corompze
To thryue
Confesser
To desfende
Cohiber
To conforte
Conforter
To ayde
Consoler
To be ydel
Connuer
To be fawte
Caucioner

To solue
Coudre
To respite
Contrestre
To lye
Coucher
To be aptis
Conchier
To wynde
Cligner
To dyede
Craindre
To feare
Cremir
To burste
creuer
To farte or to burste
Crepiter
To asserme
Creancer
To cipe
Crier
To bake
Cuire
To smarte
Cuyze

D

To dampne
Damnce
To danse
Danser
To date
Datter
To cast a darte
Darder
To aske
Demander
To pay the colles
Destroier

To discomfite
Desconfire
To d fende
Defsendze
To vnnayle
Desclouçr
To owe
Debuoir
To d:bate
Dabatre
To oue come
Debellçr
To iuge
Decider
To begyle
Defrauder
to go out of the way
Desoier
To denye
Denier
To spende
Despendze
To vnhang
Despendze
To dye
Deuier
To purpose
Deliberçr
To vnbynde
Delliçr
To deuore
Deuozçr
To take awaye
Destituer
To distremp
Destrempet
To diloge
Desloger
To deuine
Deuiner

To backite
Detracter
To deceyue
Decepuoir
To gyue sentence
Determiner
To discusse
Destrainçr
To destroye
Demollir
To distourbe
Destourber
To vntusse
Destrousser
To d:lyuer
Deliuieret
To vnn:ste
Dentier
To preiudice
Deroguer
To put of remètes
Il Despouller
To dispraise
Despriser
To deuile
Deuiler
To come downe
Descendze
To vnfolde
Desueloper
To depraue
Depzauer
To put downe
De pzimer
To make foule
Deturper
To vnknowe
descognoistre
To foyleake
Delaisser

To deuoure
Degluber
To seale
Desister
To robbe
Destrober
To go out of ordze
Descegler.
To temper
Destrempet
To vnbridel
Desozider
To discharge
Descharger
To discorde
Descozder
To put downe
Desinectre
To denye sapens
Dsoire
To put out
Debouter
To vncouer
Descouurir
To take away land
Destetter
To disinherit
Desheritter
To breake faste
Desnuer
To distroy
Destruire
To dishonoure
Deshonozet
To defyle
Deflozet
To go fro merite
Desmeriter
To vnparuzp
Despouctioz

D Des

To rele	To haue lordeshippe	To put in the ouyn
Desuider	Dominer	Enfourner
To discorage	To gye	To exteme
Descozager	Donner	Esmer
to put out of þ place	To slepe	To cromosome
Desloquer	Dormir	Esmer
to dystroy the people	To tame	To spare
Despopuler	Domppter	Espargner
to take a way mayde	To desplaye	To sparle
despuceler (hed)	Desplier	Espardze
To spoyle	To vnarme.	To sparcle aboute
Despredet	Desarmer	Esparpillier
To set forth & go bak		To enforce
Desmarcher	E	Esforcer
to vnbēde a crosbow	To spoyle	To hunt away
Descocher	Esbatre	Enchasser
To clatter out	To bathe	To lyghten
Descliquer	Esbahir	Esclarcir
To vnholse	To be bawlede	To hyde away
Deschausser	Esbaudir	Esconser
To spoyle	To blunche	To eschewe
Despouller	Esblouir	Escheoir
To vnbende	To here or harken	To make of
Desbendze	Escouter	Excuter
To unlace	To set vpon the spit	To byng: to passe
Deslacher	Embzoher	Excuter
to make mirth as byz	To teche	to be delpuerd of a
Degoiger des	Endoctriner	Enfanter (childe)
To deserue	To kepe showte wa	To breke
Deseruir	Eschāgueter ch	Enfraindze
To delate	To scrache	To sinke
Delater	Esgratigner	Enfoundzet
To dystroy	To make softe	To sinke
Dissiper	Emollir	Enfonser
To dispute	To ware harde	To set togider narou
Descepter	Endurcir	Enferrer (ly
To dispence	To wrappe	to go out of the way
Despenser	Enfardeler	Escarter
To say	To folde vp	To put or blot out
Dire	Enueloner	Effacer

To go out of þ way	To grynde	To spyre
Egarer	Esouldze	Espter
To waxe great	To stoupe	To pluc a way
Engrossir	Estoupper	Escacier
To moue	To sette at large	To hope
Esmonuoir	Eslargir	Esperer
To clyppe	To sette vp	To enmayle
Embracer	Eriger	Esmailler
To lyght	To exalte	To sterc out the bra
Esclerer	Exalter	Escerueler
To scape	To styre one	To clene the nose
Escapper	Eragiter	Esnoucher
To skymy the	To put out of order	To ware a slepe
Escarmucher	Erozbiter	Endozmir
To quarter	To be buse	To wake
Escarteler	Exerciter	Esueiller
To mocke	To take without rht	To invade
Escharmit	Extozquer	Empoindze
To make asfayde	To destroy	To presse out
Es pouenter	Exterminer	Espraindze
To be marueyled	To excuse	To kyndle
Esmerueiller	Excuser	Empzendze
To gete cozage	To make of	To teche
Esuertuer	Escusser	Enseigner
To proue	To say nay	To launch a bote
Esprouuer	Escondire	Esquipper
To spurre	To declare	To make
Esperonner	Explicquer	Escourte
To vnderstande	To declare	To set a thyng in the
Entendze	Epiloquer	Esuenter ^{wende}
To cancre	To go about	To dye vppe
Il Enrouiller	enuitonner	Esuer
To ware madde	To serche nygh	To be a halshed
Enrager	Expliquer	Estonner
To ware riche	To poyson	to put liker i a vessel
Enrichir	Empoisonner	Entonner
To breake	To wrappe	To put in the case
Entamer	Entoztiller	Estuyper
To put in pr'son	To flez	To quenche
Empzisonner	Escozcher	Estaindze

To stablyſhe	To ſtanche	To hyndle
Eſtabliſh	Enſtancher	Embzaſer
To ſtrype	To leade away	To ware ſayze
Eſtruer	Enmener	Embelliſh
To ſparcle	To eſchew	To ſpot with myſth
Eſtinciler	Euitet	Embouet
To enforce	To ſet vpon a hepe	To beſpytte
Enfozcer	Entaſſer	Embzenet
To take corage	To cut	To ſcalde
Encourager	Entaller	Eſchauder
To encrease	To folowe	To chaſſe
Encroiſtre	Enſuiuir	Erchauffer
To ſet a ſtringe bys	To dye	to pluck fro the ſhelle
encoꝝder (a bowe	Eſpirer	Eſchailer
To wyte	To hyndle	To make worſe
Eſcripze	Eſpzendze	Empieret
To curſe	To lete	To ſet in preſſe
Eſcomunier	Empescher	Empzeſſer
To vnder take	To embrace	To excepte
Empzendze	Embzacher	Excepter
To vnder take	To make thyeke	To banzhe
En terpzendze	Eſpeſſic	Exiller
To ſtreche	To ladle	To byche a dert
Eſtendze	Eſpuiſer	Euiſeter
To tie with a chaine	To beare away	
Enchainer	Empoꝝter.	F
To cloſe	To exorte	To talke
Encloze	Enoꝝter	Fabuler
To mete	To neſe	To forge
Encontrer	Eſtrenuer	Fabzicquer
To borrowe	To ſende	to go about nought
Enpzunter	Enuoier	Fatrouller
To burpe	To ſcratche	To fantaſye
Enſepuelir	Eſgratigner	Fantaſier
To moue	to giue the fiſt haſel	To moꝝ
Eſmouoir	Eſtriner	Faulcher
To ware ryche	To ſtoppe	To penetre
Enrichir	Eſtancher	Fauſſer
To put in the ground	to pluck by parfoꝝce	To make falſe
Enterrer	Entacher	Faliſtier

Fall

To sayle	To forme or shape	To fosset
faillir	figurer	fosfaire
To do	To spinne	to draw fro another
faire	filer	foxtaire
to print as womē do	To fasten a thing on	To fow were
farder	ficher (the ground)	foxiurer,
To wappe	To congele	To scourge
fardeler	foiter	fouetter
To play or mocke	To melte	To fly
farcier	fondre	fouir
To stuffe meate	To forgeue	To fetch vntill
farsir	foiger	foutrager
To fayne	To hurt or to dresse	To go fro the lyne
faindre	foulier (cloth)	fozligner
To fash a thinge	To serche	To enforce
fassonner	fouller	forcer
To helpe	To surre	To shape
fauziser	foutrer	former
To make one werpe	To pynayle	To vse ydel wordes
facer	fourbollir	flago,ner
To fawne	to go out of the way	To flatter
faonner	foutruoter	flatter
To swadel	To waxe madde	To smell
facher	fosfener	flaiter
To make fartil	to be killed w th tēpest	To tormente
feconder	fauldrier	flageller
To cleue	To playe the foole	To pipe
fendre	folloier	flaioller
To stryche	to cofe a mēbe w th	To wade
ferir	fomēter (a bathe)	flaistrir
To make hay	To donge	To bowe
fener	fienter	fleschir
To make fest	To lay out	To flopythe
fettoier	fonser	flourir
To put the leuain	To mytte out	To haunte
fermenter	fozdore	frequenter
To shewe horses	To surbyth	To quake
ferrer	foubrir	fremir
To thyt	To banythe	To frye
fermer	fozbanir	fric qualles
		fric, frice

To frye
Frite
to make of the ague
Fringuer
To playe the galant
Frissonner
To bruse
Froier
To rubbe
Froter
To breake
Froisser
To runne away
Fout
To assist
Fulcir
To threaten
Fulminer
To fume
Fumer
To discerue
Frustrer

G

To mocke
Gaber
To lay a wager
Gager
To gage a vessell
Gauger
to destroy any thyng
Garconner
To hepe
Garder
To garnyshe
Garnir
To garant
Garantir
To galope a horse
Galopper

To lette blode
Garler
To clatter
Garruler
To waste
Gastres
To reioyse
Gaudir
To make mery, or to
Galler (pith)
To wynde
Gaigner
To lye downe
Gelir
To dresse
Gencer
To frese
Geller
To turmente
Gehiner
To confesse
Gehir
To playne
Gemit
To double
Geminer
To tourne
Geret de or therth
to discerue the woyl
Geographer
To sprynge
Germiner
to eate as a glotton
Gourmander
To say meate
Gouster
To dropp
Gouter
To gouerne
Gouuerner

To parbrake
Gosiller
to barke as a fulmer
Glatir
To gleane
Glenner
To glorifye
Glozifier
To glose
Glose
To folde toggyder
Glometer
To glew
Glutiner
To claue
Grater
To graue or sculpe
Grauer
To nop
Greuer
To grese botes
Grasser
To hayle
Gresler
To selpe
Il Griller
To selpe
Glisser
To scratche
Griffer
To gryppe
gn Grigner
To gryppe or to clime
Gripper
To grudge
gn Grongnier
To curle as a catte
Gruler
To heale
Guerir

To rewarde
Guerdonnet
 To forsake
Guerpic
 To caste
Geter
 To make warre
Guettoier
 To complayne
Guerinenter
 To voyde
Guenchic
 To lyfte vp
Guinder
 To gyde
Gupder
 To watche
Guetter
 to loke with one eye
Guignet

H

To leane alone
Habandonner
 To haue plentie
Habonder
 To cutte smale
Hacher
 To haunte
Hanter
 To be sonne burnt
Harler
 To plucke vp
Haller
 To rase thepde
Hapler
 To calse
Happer
 To harpe
Herper

To hate
Hair
 To pyke a quarell
Harceler
 To pyke a quarell
Harier
 To rype vp
Haulser
 To play at dyce
Hasarder
 To herborowe
Herbeger
 To lodge
Hosteler
 To harowe
Hercher
 To ney as a horse
Hennir
 to succede to heritage
Heriter
 To moue
Hobber
 To be wery
Hoder
 To spotte
Honnir
 to make one a shame
Hontoier
 To grudge
gn Hongner
 To put on dotes
Houser
 To wynde vp
Housser
 To calle
Hucher
 To suppe
Humer
 To humme
Huner

to strepke with horns
Hurter
 To be meke
huinilier
 To hurtel togider
Hurteler
 to make a cresse like a
hurer cohe fightige
 To houle as a dogge
Huler a hedge hog
 to let by the heves as
Herissonner

I

The boost
Iacter
 To chatter as bydes
Iargonner
 To folowe
Imiter
 To trouble
Infester
 To saye vnto
Inferer
 To iniury
Iniurier
 To put vpon
Inculquet
 To call
Inciter
 To brynge in
Introduire
 To stabliss a bil
Introniser
 To put in par force
Intruser
 To enquire
Interroguet
 To teache
Instrutre
Inuel

To attempte
Inuestiguer
 To fynde
Inuenter
 To make vnheppe
Infortuner
 To moue
Instiguer
 To repproue
Impproperer
 To wrappe
Intriquer
 To sacrifice
Inmollet
 To inuade
Inuader
 To intoricate
Infectioner
 To be importunate
Importuner
 To require
Implozer
 To call
Inuocquer
 To gete
Impetrer
 To put on
Imputer
 To repparde
Ingerer
 To enspire
Inspirer
 To wrappe
Inuoluer
 To printe
Imprimer
 To call to
Inuiter
 To ordonne
Instituer

To let
Interpeller
 To induce
Induire
 To teche or bringe in
Introduire
 To iuste
Iouster
 To playe
Iouer
 To ioyne
Ioindre
 To fast
Iuner
 To iudge
Iuger
 To iure
Iurer
 To iustifie
Iustificier
 To do iustice
Iusticier
 To anger
Irriter
 To wynter
Iuerner
 To go out
Issir
 To cut the thronth
Iuguler
 To ranne vpon one
Ictuer
 To be brokenthyp
Iurongner

L
 To labour
Laborer
 To lace
Lacer

To lose or let go
Lacer
 To prouoke
Lacesser
 To leaue
Laisser
 To wepe
Lasser
 To lance
Lance
 To stele
Larciner
 To file a wale
Lambrousser
 To complayne
Lamenter
 to drynke as a dogge
Lapper
 To wepe
Lactimer
 To wepe
Lrimisco
 To stoue to death
Lapedet
 To larde
Larder
 To lath with lathes
Latter
 To wash
Lauer
 To lache
Lescher
 To lyfte
Leuer
 To lute as a hanks
Leuter
 To trye
Lier
 To fyle as a smyth
Limer

Liurer

To delpnet
Liurer
To rede
Lite
To heare
Louer
To lawde
Loer
To myne
Luire
To wickell
Lutter

M
To chewe
Macher
To mary
Marier
To anger
Maric
To blasfeme
Maulgrier
To bargayne
Marchander
To marty
Martirer
To marty
Martiriser
To master
Maistrer
To ware leane
Maigrir
To worke as a masō
Massonner
To mainteyn
Maintenir
To curse
Mauldire
To handell
Manter

To make foule
Maculer
To make blacke
Machurer
To trede
Macher
To marke
Marquer
To hamer
Marteler
To putte
Mectre
To begge
Mendier
To muse
Mediter
To cate
Menger
To thanke
Mercier
To backebytte
Meldice
To medel
Mefler
To reken false
Mefcompter
To do a myfte
Mefprendre
To dispicase
Mefpysier
To murder
Meurdre
To lye
Mentir
To deserue
Meriter
To mysanowe
Mefcognoistre
To loke in a glasse
Mixer

To dry in the ground
Miner
To lede
Mener
To allwage
Metiguer
To shewe
Moustrer
To mozyke
Mortifier
To grounde
Mouldre
To mone
Mouuoit
To make a molds
Mouller
To wite
Il Mouller
To muet as a hawk
Muer
To hide
Mucer
To fortpfy
Munic
To multiply
Multiplier
To go to harness
Moissonner
All one
Messonner
To playe the husbāde
Mefnager
To byte
Mordre
To dye
Mourir
To mount
Monter
To swepe the nose
Moucer

To mofunds
Mozfoundze
mofke
Macquer
To put one yuch
Maumectre
To myfdon
Meffaire
All one
Mefprendze

M
To fwyne
Mager
To mew
Marrer
To ferue at tēnes
Macqueter
To geue poffeffion
Mantir
To woode
Maurer
To be boyne
Maiftre
To make matter
Mater
To fet ftreffes on a
Meruer (ladel)
To make clene
Mettoier
To denye
Mier
To hyde
Midger
to fneke with the nofe
Miffler
To becke with hede
Miquer
To hynpte
Mouer

To fwyne
Moer
b:owne
Moier
To nombze
Mombzer
To notte
Motter
To nouryge
Mozir
To walde
Moncer
To make blache
Motreer
To certify
Motiffier
To name
Mommer
To hurt
Muyze
To ftrype
Noifer

O
To obape
Obair
To be occupied
Occuper
To darken
Obscurer
To faye puell
Obtrecter
To obayne
Obtenir
To hynde
Obliger
To hynde to all one
Obliger
Blat ed forgotten
Obliterer

To forgette
Dublier
To with fande
Obuier
To darken
Obfusquer
To offende
Offencer
To affrende
Offrir
To hyll
Doctre
To hyde
Occulter
To make fole
Oidoier
To ordayne
Odonner
To lene
Obmectre
To hurte
Oultrager
To vnce
Oultre
To obayne
Obtenir
To graunt
Obtemperer
To conftayne
Oppumer
To apole
Opofer
To wene
Oppiner
To opprefe
Opprefler
To dare
Ofer
To pray
Ofer

to enoite as a hanka

Disiler

To warpe

Durdie

To worke

Durer

To open

Duric

To take awaye

Dster

To here

Dutr

To graunte

Ottroier

P

To foigyne

Pardonner

To pupare

Parer

To speake

Parler

To paine

Paindre

To foilwere

Paruier

To parfoyme

Parfoiner

To make an ende

Parfaire

To lese

Perdre

To passe

Passer

To perce

Perceer

To perceyue

percepuoir

To suffre

Permettre

To waye

Deser

To thynke

Penser

To do

Perpetrer

To perishe

Pericliter

To synne

Descher

To fytthe

Descher

To preache

Descher

to pemetre as thowse

Penettrer

To presente

Preseruer

To contynue

Preseruer

To lose

Perdre

To farte

Petter

To knede

Pestric

To warantys

Pleur

To bere

Porter

To thynke

Pourpeler

To walke

Pourmener

To proue

Prouuer

To wepe

Plouter

To dowke

Plonger

to be down as a hoie

Prostituer

To bringe forth

Produire

To muldye

Pouster

To powere

Poussir

To bowe

Ploier

To sole as a mare

Poulener

To pygge as a cowe

Pourtelet

To sette

Planter

To playde

Plader

To please

Plair

To plane

Planer

To make even

Planier

to laye a thynge down

Poser or to rest

To combe the hedde

gn Digner

To pyffe

Piller

To pyffe

Pricquer

To rampe

Piller

To robbe

ll Piller

To take awaye

Priver

To banyshe

Prescripre

A.it. Presu

To presuppose
Presuposer
To heare
Perhiber
To de'ende
Prohiber
To procure
Procurer
To saye befoze
Predire
To prayse
Pziser
To make poudze
Pulueriser
to multiply as birdes
Pululler
To purchase
Purchasser
To pulishe as siluer
Polite
To caste downe
Precipiter
To publishe
Publier
To sounde
Palmer
To complayne
Plaindre
To lade out water
Puiser
To suffre
Permectre

Q
To double fouer
Quadrupler
To square
Quater
To square
Quadzet

To stoupe
Quatir
To douke
ou Coitir
To scrtche oz demad
Querir
To pyke a quarell
Quereller
to begge as a pdonce
Quester
To moue a question
Questionner
To begge
Quemander
To quyre
Quitter
To begge
Quoquiner
To playe the fols
Quocarder

R

To bring lowe
Rabaisler
To bare of a some
Rabattre
To bring agayne
Ramener
To grue yll wordes
Ramponer
To rauyshe
Raur
To take awaye all
Raser
To ransom
Ranconner
To ouer take
Rataindre
To rake with a rake
Rateler

To rampe as a cat
Ramper
To reme'bie agayne
Ramenteuoir
To allowe it
Ratifier
To refreshe
Raffreschir
To recreate
Recreer
To spyll
Respandre
To answere
Respondre
To reioyce
Resiuoir
To refuse
Refuser
To feare
Refuer
To reduce
Reduire
To refuse
Refuser
To lament
Regretter
To reioyce
Rendre
To rebounde
Rebunder
To reproue
Reprouer
To rest
Reposer
To grudge
gn Rectigner
To eate at a fier no
Reciner
To restore
Restituer

Rec

To reherce
Recencer
To resygne
Resigner

To go backe
Reculer

To reforme
Refermer

To haue
Rere

To reherce
Referer

To releue
Releuer

To bewraie
Reuelet

To reherce
Reciter

To repete
Repeter

To repugne
Repugner

To reuoke
Reuocquer

To restore in agayne
Restablit

To restrayne
Restraindre

To robbe
Robet

To cance
Il Raullet

To stare
Il Rouller

To role
Rouller

To snore
Ronflet

To gnawe
Ronger

To ruffle
Rouffler

To take all away
Rifflet

To ryme
Rimer

To rowe
Rymer

To wooe a woman
Rouuer

To speake in ones ear
Runer

To vse subtiltie
Ruser

To repete by him self
Runner

To strike agayne
Reuerberer

To shine
Resplendir

To rewarde
Remunerer

To reise agayne
Resouldre

To bye agayne
Racheter

S

To salte
Saller

To salute
Saluer

To lepe
Saulter

To ken
Scauoit

To blede
Saigner

To pelke
Sanglouter

To saue
Sauluer

To save
Sauuoter

To heale
Sauer

To halowe
Sainctifier

To sacrify
Sacrifier

To mede puel herbes
Sarcler

To graue
Sculper

To satiate
Saouler

To satisfie
Satisfaire

To saw
Semer

To somme
Seimondre

To serue
Seruir

To preche
Sermonner

To sojourne
Soiourner

To doute
Segreger

To deuyde
Separer

To gyue iugement
Sentencier

To sygne
Signer

To spoyle
Solager

To suffre
Souffrir

J.iii.

Sou

Suspecte
Soupeçonner
So save
Soier
So washe
Souhaider
So durer come
Sourmonter
So subdue
Soubinectre
So dreame
Songer
So flomize
Sommeiller
So assyle
Souldre
So spyhe
Soupirer
So beare of staye
Soubstenir
So remembre
Souuenir
So come sodenly
Souruenuir
So sweete
Suer
So leste
Seoit
So sawke
Sucher
So colow
Suiuir
So succede
Succeder
So take sodenly
Surprendre
So apde
Suffulter
So rone ouer
Suronder

So soupe
Souppet
So kare
Soucier
So surname
Sournommer
So helpe by
Sustenter
So keayne
Serrer
So flater
Sugerer
So ouer wene
Surcuider
So be sodenly a frayde
Sursailir
So suffice
Suppeter
So withdrawe
Soubstraire
So begyle
Suplanter
So calcule of nombze
Supputer
So be depyzent
Songnier

T
To blot of spote
Tacher
To go about
Tacer
To tabure
Tabourer
To pryke with heles
Tallonner
To syfte
Tamisser
To dye
Taindre

To dyette ledder
Tanner
To pryke quard
Tarier
To grope of taste
Taster
To tare
Taxer
To cut
Tailier
To tare
Tausser
To bede of go about
Tendre
To there
Tondre
To ley a tente
Tenter
To tempte
Tenter
To abyde
Tempoizer
To make besynesse
Tempester
To tempte
Tempzet
To holde
Tenir
To make one wepy
Tenner
To vade
Ternir
To ende
Terminer
To karue
Trencher
To chide
Tencer
To plat heares
Trescher

To draw
Ticer
To styre the fyre
Tiser
To dresse a woman
Tiffer
To styppre hear
Tonser
To tourne
Tourner
To swepe
Tozcher
To bede
Tozcer
To take awaye
Tollir
To medle
Il Toullet
To roughe
Toullir
To wy
Teudze
To traits
Traitter
To go ouerthwart
Trauerler
To forshape
Transmuier
To trace as a hare
Tracer
To strike or blot out
Tracer
To sounde
Transit
To sende
Transmectre
To transpoyte
Transpoyte
To betray
Trahir

To tremble
Troubler
To draw
Trainer
To fynde
Trouuer
To trauayle
Il Trauiller
To begyle
Comper
To trusse
Trousser
To cut in gobetes
Tronchonner
To falle
Tumber
To kille
Tuer
To moche
Trousser
To torment
Toutmenter
To lust or to fyghe
Toutnoier
To begge
Truander
To go thorow
Trespetcher
To expaunde
tropographer
to draw or to mylke a
Tratre
to trye
Trier

U
To barpe
Uaciller
to vaynequylle
Uaincre

To be worth
Ualloir
To fanne coyne
Uaner
To booke
Uanter
To arpe
Uarier
To be auenged
Uenger
To go about
Uacquer
To selle
Uendze
To comite
Uenir
To fpyll
Uener
To vienythe
Ueinir
To boxe
Uentoufer
To verispe
Uerifier
To make verses
Uerisifier
to serche & vttermoße
Uentiler
to lye on the bellye
Uentrouller
to fyll the cuppe
Uerler
To make wynde
Uenter
To drye the bolte
Uerrouller
To make grene
Uerdoter
To shame
Uergonder

Uelz

To fyell
Uellir

To lone

Uelner

To wathe

Uellier

To se

Ueoir

To muse

Uiser

To bysye
Uiseter

To lyue

Uiure

To turne

Uirer

To shame

Uituperer

To pyss

Uiner

To put out
Wyder

To deuoure

Uozrer

To gether grapes

Uendenger

To make shadowe

Umbzoier.

Here consequently foloweth the cōiugatjons wherof the fyrst shalbe tourned in one tens, synguler nombze & plurel, syre and thyrty maner a wayes, euery persone syre maner wayes, that is to saye the Affirmatiue thze wayes and the negatyue lykewyse, as when I say. I haue, which is affirmatiō oꝝ graūtyng. If ye do turne it, ye shall haue, Haue I. And yf ye put this worde, why, before it, ye shall haue a question, as, Why haue I, & lykewyse of the negation oꝝ denyng, whiche is, Why haue nat I. And in lyke maner thozowe euery persone synguler & plurell. And so shall it be syre and thyrty wayes in one tens, and thys rule is general foꝝ euery verbe.

Also there is another maner, which shall serue foꝝ euery verbe lykewyse and shalbe turned in one tens an hundred and eyght wayes, with thze pronownes, that is to say, me, the him. **E**xample foꝝ the fyrst persone. I haue me, I haue the, I haue him. And we tourne it, we shall haue, Haue I me, haue I the, haue I him. Then puttyng why, before it, we shall haue, why haue I me, why haue I the,

I the, why haue **I** hym, And this is nyne wayes
 in the affirmatyue. ¶ Nowe, yf ye do lykewyse in
 the negatyue, ye shall haue other nyne wayes, As
 whan ye say, **I** haue nat me, **I** haue not the, **I** ha-
 ue not him, And tournyng it, ye haue, Haue **I** not
 me, haue **I** nat the, haue **I** not hym, And puttynge
 why before, **I** haue, why haue not **I** me, why ha-
 ue nat **I** the, why haue nat **I** him. And doyng
 lykewise of the seconde persone and the thyrde, &
 consequentely with the plurell nombze, ye shall ha-
 ue syr tymes eightene variable and sondry wayes
 which do amout to an hundred and .viij. wayes in
 one tense, and maye be lykewise of euery persone,
 if ye do take but the fyrste worde of euery persone,
 ye shal haue a syngle cōiugacion, as, **I** haue, thou
 hast, he hath, we haue, ye haue, they haue &c.

Here after foloweth the fyrst cōiugacion why-
 che is sire and thyrty wayes in the presente,
 and lykewyse of euery p̄teryte & future, in euery
 tense and mode, except all the imperatiues the p̄s-
 ent of the optatyues. And by cause we can not spe-
 cifye by our wordes and of our dedes, signyfying
 action, without this verbe (Haue) we shall begyn
 with the same, addynge to it a worde or two for to
 shewe an example, howe one maye make dy-
 uerſe & many sentences with one worde,
 and percoſequent come shortely
 to the French speche.

(;) : (,)

;

¶ The

C The Indicatye present.

I have

C Jay

have I

ay ie

have I

why
Pourquoy ay ie

I have not

C Je nay pas

have not I

Nay ie pas

have not I

why
Pourquoy Nay ie pas

Thou hast

C Tu as

hast thou

As tu

hast thou

why
Pourquoy As tu

Thou hast not

C Tu nas pas

hast thou not

Nas tu pas

hast thou not

why
Pourquoy Nas tu pas

He hath

C Il a

hath he

Il

hath he

why
Pourquoy Il

he hath not

C Il na pas

hath he not

Na il pas

hath he not

why
Pourquoy Na il point

Great desyre
Grant desir

Great desyre
Grant desir

Good appetite
Bon appetit

Good appetite
Bon appetit

Sorrowe
Deul

Sorrowe
Deul

The

C The plurell nombze.

^{we have}
C Nous auons

^{have we}
Auons nous

^{why have we}
Pourquoy Auons nous

^{we have not}
C Nous nauons mie

^{have not we}
Nauons no^r mie

^{why have not we}
Pourquoy Nauons nous mie

Joye
Note

Joye
Note

^{ye have}
C Vous aues

^{have ye}
Aues vous

^{why have ye not}
Pourquoy Aues vous point

^{ye have not}
C Vous naues point

^{have ye not}
Naues vo^r point

^{why have ye not}
Pourquoy Naues vo^r point

Right
Droit

Right
Droit

^{they have}
C Ilz ont

^{have they}
Ont ilz

^{why have they}
Pourquoy Ont ilz

^{they have not}
C Ilz nont pas

^{have they not}
Nont ilz pas

^{why have they not}
Pourquoy Nont ilz pas

Shame
Honte

Shame
Honte

All.

The

¶ The preterit imparfite

I ord haue, o; I was haupng, o; I had.

¶ Jauoy

had I

Juoy ie

Good hope

Bonne esperance

why

had I

Pourquoy Juoy ie

I had not

¶ Je nauoy point

had not I

Jauoy ie point

good hope

Bonne esperance

why

had nat I

Pourquoy Jauoy ie pas.

Thou haddest

¶ Tu auois

haddest thou

Juois tu

Great feare

Belle peur

why

haddest thou

Pourquoy Juois tu

Thou haddest not

¶ Tu n'auois mie

haddest not thou

J'auois tu mie

Great feare

Belle peur

why

haddest nat thou

Pourquoy J'auois tu mie.

He dyd haue o; had

¶ Il auoit

had he

J'auoit il

Understandng

Entendement

why

had he

Pourquoy J'auoit il

He had not

¶ Il n'auoit pas

had nat he

J'auoit il pas

Understandng

Entendement

why

had not he

Pourquoy. J'auoit il pas.

The

C The plurel nombze.

We had

C Nous auions

had we

Auions nous

Raysee

Loiser

Why

had we

Pour quoy. Auions nous

We had not

C Nous n'auions pas

had not we

Raysee

N'auions nous pas

Loiser

Why

had not we

Pourquoy. N'auions no^r pas

ye had

C Vous auies

had ye

Auies vous

wronge

Cort

Why

had ye

Pourquoy Auies vous

ye had not

C Vous n'auies point

had not ye

wronge

N'auies vo^r point

Cort

Why

had ye not

Pourquoy N'auies vo^r pas.

they had

C Ilz auoient

had they

Auoient ilz

well sayd

Bien dit

Why

had they

Pourquoy Auoient ilz

they had not

C Ilz n'auoient pas

had they not

well sayd

N'auoient ilz pas

Bien dit

Why

had they not

Pourquoy N'auoit il pas.

R. iii.

1020

C The preterit parfyte.

I had

C Je eus

had I

Eus ie

fayre

parfyme

Beau paffe temps

why

had I

Pourquoy Eus ie

I had not

C Je neus pas

had not I

Neus ie pas

fayre parfyme

Beau paffe temps

why

had not I

Pourquoy Neus ie pas.

Thou haddest

C Tu eus

haddest thou

Eus tu

Woche a do

A besögnier

why

haddest thou

Pourquoy Eus tu

Thou haddest not

C Tu neues point

haddest not thou

Neues tu point

Woche a do

A besögnier

why

haddest not thou

Pourquoy Neus tu point

He had

C Il eust

had

he

Eust il

That that he soughte

Ce quil cerchoit

why

had he

Pourquoy Eust il

He had not

C Il neust pas

had not he

Neust il pas

That that he soughte

Ce quil cerchoit

why

had not he

Pourquoy Neust il pas.

The

The plurell nombre.

^{we had}

Avous eusmes

^{had we}

Eusmes nous

^{why}

^{had we}

Pourquoy Eusmes nous

^{we had not}

Avous neusmes pas

^{had not we}

Neusmes nous pas

^{why}

^{had not we}

Pourquoy Neusmes nous pas

Good corage

Bon courage

Good corage

Bon courage

^{ye had}

Vous eustes

^{had ye}

Eustes vous

^{why}

^{had ye}

Pourquoy Eustes vous

^{ye had not}

Vous neustes pas

^{had not ye}

Neustes vous pas

^{why}

^{had not ye}

Pourquoy Neustes vous pas

The pisse

Le pris

The pisse

Le pris

^{they had}

Ilz eurent

^{had they}

Eurent ilz

^{why}

^{had they}

Pourquoy Eurent ilz

^{they had not}

Ilz neurent pas

^{had they not}

Neurent ilz pas

^{why}

^{had they not}

Pourquoy Neurent ilz pas.

The advantage

Ladvantage

The advantage

Ladvantage

The

C The p[re]terit indiffinitive.

I have had

C J'ay eu

Have I had

As I eu

Have I had

Why
Pourquoy As I eu

I have not had

C Je n'ay pas eu

Have not I had

As I eu pas eu

Why
Pourquoy As I eu pas eu

Have not I had

Thou hast had

C Tu as eu

Hast thou had

As tu eu

Hast thou had

Why
Pourquoy As tu eu

Thou hast not had

C Tu n'as pas eu

Hast thou not had

As tu pas eu

Why
Pourquoy As tu pas eu

Hast thou not had

He hath had

C Il a eu

Hath he had

As il eu

Hath he had

Why
Pourquoy As il eu

He hath not had

C Il n'a pas eu

Hath he not had

As il pas eu

Why
Pourquoy As il pas eu

Hath he not had

To drink
A boire

To drink
A boire

Thou
Soif

Thou
Soif

To eat
A manger

To eat
A manger

The

¶ The plurell nombre.

We haue had

¶ Nous auons eu

Haue we had

Auons nous eu

Pacience

Pacience

why

Haue we had

¶ Pourquoy Auons nous eu

We haue not had

¶ No^r nauōs pas eu

Haue we not had

Nauōs no^r pas eu

Pacience

Pacience

why

Haue we not had

¶ Pourquoy Nauōs no^r pas eu

Ye haue had

¶ Vous aues eu

Haue ye had

Aues vous eu

Rece

Recessite

why

Haue ye had

¶ Pourquoy Aues vous eu

Ye haue not had

¶ Vo^r naues pas eu

Haue ye not had

Naues vo^r pas eu

Rece

Recessite

why

Haue ye not had

¶ Pourquoy Naues vo^r pas eu

They haue had

¶ Ilz ont eu

Haue they had

Ont ilz eu

Their wages

Leur gages

why

Haue they had

¶ Pourquoy Ont ilz eu

They haue not had

¶ Ilz nont pas eu

Haue they not had

Nont ilz pas eu

Their wages

Leur gages

why

Haue they not had

¶ Pourquoy Nont ilz pas eu

L.i.

The

C The preterit most parfpte.

I had had
Auoy eu

had I had

Auoy ie eu

had I had

why
Pourquoy Auoy ie eu

I had not had

I en auoy pas eu

had not I had

Auoy ie pas eu

had not I had

why
Pourquoy Auoy ie pas eu

The payne
Lapaine

The payne
La paine

Tu auois eu

haddest thou had

Auois tu eu

haddest thou had

why
Pourquoy Auois tu eu

Thou haddest not had

Tu nauois pas eu

haddest thou not had

Nauois tu pas eu

haddest thou not had

why
Pourquoy Nauois tu pas eu.

Profte
Prouffit

Profte
Prouffit

Il auoit eu

had he had

Auoit il eu

had he had

why
Pourquoy Auoit il eu

he had not had

Il nauoit pas eu

had not he had

Nauoit il pas eu

had not he had

why
Pourquoy Nauoit il pas eu

Damage
Domage

Damage
Domage

The

The plurell nombze.

We had had

Nous aurions eu

had we had

Aurons nous eu

Why

Gagnage

why

had we had

Pourquoy Aurons nous eu

had we not had

Naurions nous pas eu

We had not had

Why

Naurions nous pas eu

Gagnage

Why

had we not had

Pourquoy Naurions nous pas eu

Ye had had

Vous auies eu

had ye had

Auies vous eu

Why

Perle

why

had ye had

Pourquoy Auies vous eu

Ye had not had

Nauies pas eu

had ye not had

Why

Nauies vo^s pas eu

Perle

why

had ye not had

Pourquoy Nauies vous pas eu

They had had

Ilz auoient eu

had they had

Auoient ilz eu

Why

Their pleasure

why

had they had

Pourquoy Auoient ilz eu

They had not had

Ilz nauoient pas eu

had they not had

Why

Nauoient ilz pas eu

Their pleasure

why

had they not had

Pourquoy Nauoient ilz pas eu

L.u.

The

The future

I shall have

Je aray

Shall I have

Aray ie

why

Pourquoy Aray ie

I shall not have

Je naray pas

Shall not I have

Naray ie pas

why

Pourquoy Naray ie pas

Thou shalt have

Tu aras

Shalt thou have

Aras tu

why

Pourquoy Aras tu

Thou shalt not have

Tu naras pas

Shalt thou not have

Naras tu pas

why

Pourquoy Naras tu pas

He shall have

Il ara

Shall he have

Ara il

why

Pourquoy Ara il

He shall not have

Il nara pas

Shall he not have

Nara il pas

why

Pourquoy Nara il pas

Better fortune

Meilleur fortune

Better fortune

Meilleur fortune

Woe a do

Bien afaire

Woe a do

Bien afaire

I drawe

Ung festu

I drawe

Ung festu

The

CThe plurell nombre.

we shall haue

Nous arons

shall we haue

Arons nous

shall we haue

Pourquoy Arons nous

we shall not haue

Nous n'arons pas

shall we not haue

N'arons nous pas

Pourquoy N'arons nous pas

That that we wene
Ce q̃ nous cuidons

That that we wene
Ce q̃ nous cuidons

ye shall haue

Vous ares

shall ye haue

Ares vous

shall ye haue

Pourquoy Ares vous

ye shall not haue

Vous n'ares point

shall ye not haue

N'ares vous point

Pourquoy N'ares vous point

Your purpose
Vostre purpose

Your purpose
Vostre purpose

they shall haue

Ils aront

shall they haue

Aront ils

shall they haue

Pourquoy Aront ils

they shall not haue

Ils n'aront pas

shall they not haue

N'aront ils pas

Pourquoy N'aront ils pas.

The goyng for the comyng
Aler pour le venir

The goyng for þe comyng
Aler pour le venir

A.iii.

The

¶ The Imperatiue whiche is single.

^{haue thou selfe.} **¶ Ayt tu mesme,** ^{haue thy selfe.} **Ayt toy mesme.** ^{haue he.} **¶ Ayt cil,**
^{haue vni.} ^{haue me.} ^{haue we.} ^{haue ye.}
ayt celuy, ayt celle. **¶ Aions nous. Aiez vous**
^{haue ther.}

Aient ceulz, ou celles.

¶ The future.

^{like} ^{that thou haue,} ^{that he haue.} ^{that we haue}
Garde **Que tu aye, quil ayt, Que nous aions,**
^{that ye haue, that they haue.}
que vous aiez, quilz aient.

¶ The seconde future negatyue.

^{do} ^{that thou haue nat,} ^{do that he haue nat,} ^{do that}
fais **Que tu naye point, quil nait pas, q nous**
^{we haue not,} ^{that ye haue} ^{not,} ^{that they haue not.}
naïos mie, que vous nates pas, quilz nalent pas.

¶ The optatyue whiche is syngle lyke wyse, the whiche shall serue for a future, with an additio of the tyme to come, as Tantost or demain &c.

^{I praye you} ^{that I haue, that thou haue, that he haue}
¶ Je vous prie. Que iaye, que tu aie, quil ayt.
^{With my will} ^{that we haue, that ye haue, that they haue}
Ama boullète Que no^s aïos, q vo^s aiez, qlz aiet.

¶ The p^reterit imparfite, whiche maye serue lyke wise for the p^rit, after the olde gramer.

^{Wolde god} ^{that I had, that thou haddest, that &c.}
¶ Plust a dieu Que ie eusse, q tu eusse, qlz eust.
^{Wolde god} ^{that we had, that ye had, that they had.}
Plu. a dieu, q no^s eussïos, q vo^s eussiez, qlz eussent

¶ The p^reterit parfite.

^{Wolde to god} ^{that I haue had that thou that he}
Ama boullète que iaye eu, q tu aie eu, ql ait eu
^{Wolde to god that we haue had, that ye haue had, that they ha. had}
A ma vo, q no^s aïos eu, q vo^s aies eu, qlz aient eu.

The

The p̄terit most parfyte.

O ^{yt} ^{I had had,} ^{Thou haddest had.} ^{He had had.}
O ^{yt} ^{we had had,} ^{ye had had,} ^{they had had}
O ^{yt} ^{no^r eussios eu,} ^{vo^r eussiez eu,} ^{ilz eussiet eu}

The subunctyue is lyke the optatiue saue the future sayeng, Comme o^r Quant.

C ^{I haue} ^{Tu aye} ^{Of custome}
C ^{Tu haue} ^{De coustome}
C ^{They haue}
C ^{Il ayt}
C ^{we haue,} ^{ye haue,} ^{they haue,}
C ^{no^s nous aions,} ^{vous aiez,} ^{ilz ayent.}

The p̄terite parfyte,
C ^{As} ^{I had o^r dyd haue,} ^{as thou haddest.}
C ^{as he had.} ^{As we had o^r dyd haue.}
C ^{come il eust ou il auoit.} <sup>C ^{as} ^{no^r eussios ou auios,}
C ^{as} ^{ye had} ^{no they had}
C ^{come vo^r eussiez ou auoyez,} ^c ^{oe ilz eussiet ou auoiet}</sup>

The p̄terite imparfyte.
C ^{As} ^{I haue had,} ^{as thou hast had,} ^{as he hath had}
C ^{As we haue had,} ^{as ye haue had,} ^{as they haue had.}
C ^{oe no^r ayos eu,} ^c ^{oe vo^r ayez eu,} ^c ^{oe ilz ayent eu.}

The p̄terite plusparfyte,
C ^{yt} ^{I had had,} ^{yt thou haddest had,} ^{yt he had had.}
C ^{yt} ^{we had had,} ^{yt ye had had,} ^{yt they had had.}
C ^{Se no^r eussios eu,} ^{se} ^{vo^r eussiez eu,} ^{se} ^{ilz eussiet eu.}

The fy^rst future, which may be tourned. xxxvi.
maner of wapes, as the Indicatyue.

C ^{As} ^{I shoulde haue,} ^{thou} ^{he} ^{we}
C ^{Come} ^{haroie,} ^{tu arois,} ^{il aroit.} **C** ^{Nous arions,}
C ^{vous}

ye Mulde haue, they Mulde heu:

vous aries, ilz aroient. ¶ **The seconde future.**

^{En} that I haue, ^{that} thou haue, ^{that} he haue, ^{That} we haue,
Mais, q'aye, que tu aye, quil ayt, Que no^s aios,
^{that} ye haue, ^{that} they haue, ^{to haue}

que vo^s ayes, quil ayent. ¶ **The Infinitif.** **Auoir**

^{To haue I ad}

^{to haue}

¶ **The Pretterit.** **Auoir eu.** **Gerundiuus.** **Dauoir**

^{For to haue.}

^{In haupnge.}

Pour auoir, En ayant. ¶ **The Querthowen**

^{I you wolde had, I you desire had}

o: supinis. **Je vo^sould:ois eu, ie vo^s desire eu.**

And thus endeth the coniugatio of this verbe Haue

Here foloweth a coniugation of an hundred &
 eyght wayes in one tence onely, wher ye shall
 reherce twise the interrogatiues of bothe the affir-
 matiue & negatiue. The fyrst tyme, as it standeth
 wrytten, & the seconde tyme, puttige outhet
 why o: Howe befoze it.

¶ **The fyrst persone**

^{I knowe me,}

^{I knowe the,}

^{I knowe hym.}

¶ **Je me congnoy, ie te congnoy, ie le congnoy.**

^{why}

^{knowe}

^I

^{me,}

^{why}

^{knowe}

^I

Pourquoy Je congnoy ie, po. qu. te congnoy ie,

^{why}

^{knowe}

^I

^{him.}

po. qu. le congnoy ie.

^I

^{knowe}

^{not}

^{me,}

^I

^{knowe}

^{not}

^{the,}

¶ **Je ne me congnoy pas, Je ne te congnoy pas,**

^I

^{knowe}

^{not}

^{him,}

Je ne le congnoy pas.

^{Howe knowe not I me, Howe knowe not}

¶ **Cõe Je me congnoy ie pas, Cõe Je te cõgnoy**

^I

^{the,}

^{Howe}

^{knowe}

^{not}

^I

^{him,}

ie pas, Cõe ne le congnoy ie pas.

The

The second persone.

Thou knowest me, thou the thou hym
Tu me congnois, tu te congnois, tu le cōgnois
 how knowest thou me, how. thou the

Come He congnoys tu, come te congnoys tu
 how thou him,
 come le congnoys tu.

Thou knowest not me, thou not the
Tu ne me congnois pas, tu ne te congnois pas
 thou not him.
 tu ne le congnois pas

Come He me congnois tu pas, Come He te
 thou not the, howe thou not hym
 congnois tu pas, Come He le congnois tu pas

The thy;de person.

He knewe me, he the, he hym.
Il me cognoit, Il te congnoit, Il se cognoit
 how knewe he me, howe he the, how

Come He congnoit il, come te congnoit il, come
 he him.
 se congnoit il.

He knewe not me, he not the
Il ne me congnoit pas, Il ne te congnoit pas
 he not him.
Il ne se congnoit pas

Howe knewe not he me, howe not he the
Cōe He me cōgnoit il pas, come ne te congnoit il
 how not he him.
 come ne se congnoit il pas.

The plutel noumbre.

we knewe vs, we you
Nous no^s congnoissons, no^s vo^s congnoissons
 we them.
 nous les congnoissons.

Howe knowe we vs, how
Come Nous congnoissons, come vous
 M. I. con

^{we you how we them.}
cognoissons nous, come les cognoissôs nous.

^{we know vs not, we}
Nous ne nous cognoissôs pas, ^{you not we can them not} No⁹ ne vous
cognoissons pas, Nous ne les cognoissons pas.

^{Why do we not you, why}
Pourquoy Ne nous cognoissons nous pas,
pourquoy ne nous cognoissôs no⁹ pas pourquoy
^{do we not them.} ne les cognoissons nous pas.

The seconde persone.

^{Ye vs knowe, ye you know,}
Vous nous cognoisses, ^{ye them know.} vo⁹ vous cognoisses
vous les congnoisses.

^{Howe know ye vs, howe}
Come Nous congnoisses vous, come vous cõ-
^{you vs, how they vs.}gnoisses vous, come les cognoisses vous.

^{Ye know vs not ye}
Nous ne no⁹ cognoisses pas, vous ne vous cõ-
^{you nat you them nat}gnoisses pas, vous ne les cognoisses pas.

^{How know ye nat vs, how}
Come Ne no⁹ cognoisses vo⁹ pas, cõe ne vo⁹
^{ye nat you, how ye nat them.}cognoisses vo⁹ pas, cõe ne les cognoisses vo⁹ pas

The thyrde persone.

^{They know vs, they you}
Ils nous congnoissent, ils vous congnoissent.
^{they them}ils les congnoissent.

^{How know they vs, how}
Come Nous congnoissent ils, come vous con-
^{they you, how they them.}gnoissent ils, come les congnoissent ils.

^{They dyd not know vs, they dyd not}
CIlz ne nous cognoissent pas, ilz ne vous con-
^{you, they dyd not them.}
gnoissent pas, ilz ne les cognoissent pas.

^{How knew they not vs, how}
CCome Ne nous cognoissent ilz pas, cõe ne vo⁹
^{they not you, how they not them}
cognoissent ilz pas, come ne les cognoisset ilz pas

CThe p̄terit imparfet.

^{I dyd know me, I dyd the, I dyd hym:}
CJe me cognoissoie, ie te cognoissoie, ie le cog.
^{How dyd I knowe me, how dyd I the,}

CCome me cognoissoie ie, come te cognoissoie ie
^{How dyd I him.}
come le cognoissoie ie.

^{I dyd not know me, I dyd not the}
CJe ne me cognoissoie pas, ie ne te cognoissoie
^{I dyd not him.}
pas, ie ne le cognoissoie pas.

^{Why dyd not I know me, how}
CPourquoy Ne me cognoissoie ie pas, pourq. ne
^{dyd not I you, how dyd not I hym}
te cognoissoie ie pas po. q. ne le cognoissoie ie pas.

CThe seconde persone.

^{Thou dydest knew me, thou dydest the, thou dydest}
CTu me cognoissois, tu te cognoissois, tu le co.
^{How dydest thou know me, how dydest thou the}

CCome Ne cognoissois tu, cõe te cognoissois tu
^{how dydest thou hym.}
come le cognoissois tu.

^{Thou dydest not know me, thou dydest not}
CTu ne me cognoissois pas, tu ne te cognoissois
^{the, thou dydest not hym.}
pas, tu ne le cognoissois pas.

^{How dydest thou not know me, how dydest thou}
CCome ne me cognoissois tu pas, come ne te con
^{not the, how dydest thou not hym.}
gnoissois tu pas, come ne le cognoissois tu pas.

^{He dyd know me,} ^{He dyd the,} ^{He dyd} ^{byn}
Il me cognoissoit, Il te cognoissoit, Il le cog
^{how dyd he knowe me.} ^{howe} ^{dyd he} th

Come ^{Howe} ^{dyd} ^{he} ^{him,} ^{howe} ^{dyd} ^{he} ^{him,}
cōe te cognoissoit il,

come le cognoissoit il.

^{He dyd not knowe me,} ^{he} ^{dyd not the}
Il ne me cognoissoit pas, il ne te cognoist. pas
^{he dyd not} ^{him}

il ne le cognoissoit pas.

^{How dyd not he knowe me.} ^{How} ^{dyd not}
Come ^{he} ^{the,} ^{how} ^{dyd not he} ^{him}
ne me cognoissoit il pas, cōe ne te con-
gnoissoit il pas, cōe ne le cognoissoit il pas

The plurell nombre.
^{We} ^{dyd} ^{knowe us,} ^{we} ^{dyd} ^{you}
Nous no^r cōgnoissio^s, no^r vo^s cōgnoissio^s
^{we} ^{dyd} ^{them,}
nous les congnoissio^s.

^{How dyd we knowe us,} ^{howe} ^{dyd} ^{we}
Come nous congnoissio^s no^r, come vous con-
^{you,} ^{how} ^{dyd} ^{we} ^{them}
gnoissio^s nous, come les congnoissio^s nous

^{we} ^{dyd not} ^{knowe} ^{us,} ^{we} ^{dyd not}
Nous ne nous congnoissio^s pas, nous ne vo^s
^{you,} ^{we} ^{dyd not} ^{them}
congnoissio^s pas, nous ne les cōgnoissio^s pas
^{why} ^{dyd not} ^{we} ^{knowe} ^{us,}

Pourquoy ne nous congnoissio^s nous pas
^{why} ^{dyd not} ^{we} ^{knowe} ^{you,} ^{why}
pour quoy ne vous congnoissio^s no^r pas, pour q.
^{dyd} ^{not} ^{we} ^{knowe} ^{them,}
ne les congnoissio^s nous pas.

The secende person.
^{Ye} ^{dyd knowe us,} ^{ye} ^{dyd} ^{knowe} ^{you}
Vous nous cognoisses, vous vo^s cognoisses,
^{ye} ^{dyd knowe} ^{them,}
vous les cognoisses.

Come

^{Howe dyd ye knowe vs,}
Come vous cognoissies vous, come vous co-
^{knowe you, howe dyd ye knowe them,}
 gnoissies vous, come les congnoissies vous.

^{ye dyd not knowe vs, ye dyd not}
Cous ne nous congnoissies pas, vous ne nous
^{knowe you, ye did not knowe them,}
 congnoissies pas, vous ne les cognoissies pas.

^{Howe dyd ye not knowe vs, howe}
Come Ne nous cognoissies vous pas, come
^{dyd ye not knowe you, howe did ye not knowe them,}
 vous cognoissies no^r pas, cõe ne les cog. vo^r pas.

CThe thy:de parson.

^{They dyd knowe vs, they dyd you}
Ilz no^r cognoissoient, ilz vous cognoissoient,
^{they dyd them}
 ilz les cognoissoient.

^{How dyd they knowe vs, how dyd they}
Come nous cognoissoient ilz, come vous con-
^{you, how dyd they them,}
 gnoissoient ilz, come les cognoissoient ilz.

^{They dyd not knowe vs, they did not}
Ilz ne nous cognoissoient pas, ilz ne vous co-
^{you, you dyd not them,}
 gnoissoient pas, ilz ne les cognoissoient pas.

^{Howe dyd they not knowe vs, How dyd}
Come Ne no^r cognoissoient ilz pas, cõe ne vo^r co-
^{they not you, how dyd they not them}
 gnoissoient ilz pas, cõe ne les cognoissoient ilz pas.

CThe p:terit parfet.

^{I knewe me, I she, I h/m}
Je me Cogneus, ie te cogneus, ie le cogneus
^{How knewe I me, how I she, howe I h/m}

Cõe Me cogneus ie, cõe te cog. ie, cõe le cog. ie.
^{I knewe not me, I not the,}

Je ne me cogneus pas, ie ne te cogneus pas,
^{I not hym,}
 ie ne le cogneus pas.

^{How knew not I me, howe not}
Come Ne me cogneus ie pas, come ne te con-
^{I the, how not I him}
 gneus ie pas, come ne le congneus ie pas

CThe seconde parsonne

^{Thou knewest me, thou the, thou him.}
CTu me cogneus, tu te cogneus, tu le cogneus.

^{Why knew he me, why}
Pourquoy Ne cogneus tu, pourquoy te con-
^{he the, why he him.}
 gneus tu, pourquoy le cogneus tu,

^{Thou knewest not me, thou not the,}
CTu ne me cogneus pas, tu ne te cogneus pas,
^{thou not him.}
 tu ne le cogneus pas.

^{How knewest thou not me, how thou}
Come Ne me cogneus tu pas, come ne te con-
^{not I, how thou not him.}
 gneus tu pas, come ne le cogneus tu pas.

CThy de persone.

^{He knewe me, he the, he him.}
Cil me Congneut, il te congneut, il le congneut

^{How knew he me, how he the, how he him}
Come Me cog. il, come te cog. il, come le cog. il

^{He knewe not me, he not the,}
Cil ne me congneut pas, il ne te congneut pas,

^{he not him.}
 il ne le congneut pas.

^{Why knew not he me, why}
Pourquoy Ne me congenut il pas, pourq. ne
^{not he the, why not he him}
 te congneut il pas pourquoy ne le congneut il pas.

CThe plurell nombre.

^{We knew vs, we you,}
Nous nous cogneusmes, nous vous cogneus-

^{we them.}
 mes, nous les cogneusmes.

Come

^{how} ^{knew} ^{we} ^{vs,} ^{how}
C Come Nous Cogneusmes nous, come nous
^{we} ^{you,} ^{how} ^{we} ^{them,}
cogneusmes vous, come les cogneusmes nous

^{We} ^{knew} ^{not} ^{vs,} ^{we}
C Nous ne nous cogneusmes pas, nous ne vo⁹
^{not} ^{you,} ^{we} ^{not} ^{them,}
cogneusmes pas, nous ne les cogneusmes pas.

^{how} ^{knew} ^{we} ^{not} ^{vs,} ^{how}
C Cœ ne no⁹ cogneusmes no⁹ pas, cœ no⁹ ne vo⁹
^{we} ^{not} ^{you,} ^{how} ^{we} ^{not} ^{them,}
cogneusmes nous pas, come ne les cog, nous pas

C The seconde persone.

^{Ye} ^{knew} ^{vs,} ^{ye} ^{you,}
C Vous nous cogneustes, vous vo⁹ cogneustes
^{ye} ^{them,}
vous les cogneustes.

^{how} ^{knew} ^{ye} ^{vs,} ^{how}
C Come nous cogneustes vous, come vous co-
^{ye} ^{you,} ^{how} ^{ye} ^{them,}
gneustes vous, come les cogneustes vous.

^{Ye} ^{knew} ^{not} ^{vs,} ^{ye}
C Vous ne nous cogneustes pas, vous ne vo⁹
^{not} ^{you,} ^{ye} ^{not} ^{them,}
cogneustes pas, vous ne les cogneustes pas.

^{how} ^{knew} ^{ye} ^{not} ^{vs,} ^{how}
C Come Ne no⁹ cogneustes nous pas, cœ ne vo⁹
^{ye} ^{not} ^{you,} ^{how} ^{ye} ^{not} ^{them,}
cogneustes no⁹ pas, cœ ne les cogneustes no⁹ pas

C The thy³de persone.

^{They} ^{knew} ^{vs,} ^{they} ^{you,} ^{they} ^{them,}
Ils no⁹ cogneurêt, ils vo⁹ cogneurêt, ils les cong.
^{how} ^{knew} ^{they} ^{vs,} ^{how} ^{they}

C Come nous cogneurent ils, come vous cogneu-
^{you,} ^{how} ^{they} ^{them}
rent ils, come les cogneurent ils.

^{They} ^{knew} ^{not} ^{vs,} ^{they}
C Ils ne nous cogneurent pas, ils ne nous con-
gneurêt

^{nat} ^{you} ^{they} ^{not} ^{them}
gneurent pas, ilz ne les cogneurent pas.

^{How} ^{knewe} ^{they} ^{not} ^{us,} ^{how}
Come Ne nous cogneurēt ilz pas, cōe ne vous
^{they} ^{not} ^{you,} ^{howe} ^{they} ^{not} ^{them}
cogneurent ilz pas, cōe ne les cogneurent ilz pas.

CThe p̄terit Indiffinitif.

^I ^{have} ^{known} ^{me,} ^I ^{have} ^{the,} ^I ^{have} ^{him}
CJe may cogneu, ie tay cogneu, ie lay cogneu.

^{How} ^{have} ^I ^{known} ^{me,} ^{how} ^{have} ^I ^{the}
Come May ie cogneu, come tay ie congneu,
^{howe} ^{have} ^I ^{him,}
come lay ie cogneu.

^I ^{have} ^{not} ^{known} ^{me,} ^I ^{have} ^{not} ^{the,}
CJe ne may pas cogneu, ie ne tay pas cogneu,
^I ^{have} ^{not} ^{him,}
ie ne lay pas cogneu.

^{How} ^{have} ^{not} ^I ^{known} ^{me,} ^{how} ^{have} ^{not} ^I
Come Ne may ie pas congneu, come ne tay ie
^{the,} ^{howe} ^{have} ^{not} ^I ^{him}
pas cogneu, come ne lay ie pas cogneu.

CThe seconde parlone.

^{Thou} ^{hast} ^{known} ^{me,} ^{thou} ^{hast} ^{the,} ^{thou} ^{hast} ^{him}
CTu Mas cogneu, tu te as cogneu, tu las cog.

^{How} ^{hast} ^{thou} ^{known} ^{me,} ^{how} ^{hast} ^{thou} ^{the}
Come Mas tu congneu, come tas tu congneu
^{howe} ^{hast} ^{thou} ^{him,}
come las tu cogneu.

^{Thou} ^{hast} ^{not} ^{known} ^{me,} ^{thou} ^{hast} ^{not} ^{the,}
Cene mas pas cogneu, tu ne tas pas cogneu,
^{thou} ^{hast} ^{not} ^{him,}
tu ne las pas cogneu.

^{How} ^{hast} ^{not} ^{thou} ^{known} ^{me,} ^{how} ^{hast} ^{not} ^{thou}
Come Ne mas tu pas cogneu, come ne tas tu
^{the,} ^{how} ^{hast} ^{not} ^{thou} ^{him,}
pas cogneu, come ne las tu pas cogneu.

CThe thy;de person.

^{he hath knowen me, he hath the, he hath him,}
¶ **Al ma congeu, il ta congeu, il la congeu.**
^{How hath he knowen me, how hath he the how}
¶ **Come Ma il congeu, come ta il cogneu, come**
^{hath he him,}
la il cogneu.

^{he hath nat knowen me, he hath nat the,}
¶ **Al Re ma pas congeu, il ne ta pas congeu,**
^{he hath nat him.}
il ne la pas congeu.

^{How hath nat he knowen me, how hath nat he}
¶ **Come Re ma il pas cogneu, come ne ta il pas**
^{the, how hath he him.}
cogneu, come ne la il pas cogneu.

¶ **The plurel nombre.**
^{we haue knowen vs, we haue}
¶ **Nous nous auons cogneu, nous vous auons**
^{you, we haue them.}
cogneu, nous les auons cogneu.
^{How haue we knowen vs, how haue we}
¶ **Come Nous auons no^r cogneu, cõe vo^r auons**
^{you, how haue we them,}
nous cogneu, come les auons nous cogneu.

^{we haue nat knowen vs, we haue}
¶ **Nous ne nous auons pas cogneu, no^r ne vo^r**
^{nat you, we haue nat them}
auons pas cogneu, nous ne les auõs pas cogneu
^{How haue we nat knowen vs, how}
¶ **Come ne nous auons nous pas cogneu, come**
^{haue we nat you, how haue we}
ne vous auons nous pas cogneu, cõe ne les auõs
^{them,}
nous pas cogneu.

¶ **The seconde persone.**
^{ye haue knowen vs, ye haue}
¶ **Vous nous aues cogneu, vous vous aues co-**
^{you, ye haue knowen them.}
gneu, vous les aues cogneu.

R.

Come

^{Have ye knowen vs, have ye}
C Come Vous aues vous cogneu, cōe bo⁹ aues
^{you, have ye them.}

^{ye have nat knowen vs, ye have nat}
vous cogneu, come les aues vous cogneu.

^{you, ye have nat them.}
C Vous ne nous aues pas cogneu, vous ne vous
^{How have nat you knowen vs, how}
aues pas cogneu, vous ne les aues pas cogneu.

^{have nat ye you, how have nat}
C Come Ne nous aues vous pas cogneu, come
^{ye them.}
ne vous aues vous pas cogneu, come ne les auez
vous pas cogneu.

C The thynde persone.

^{They have knowen me they have you, they have the.}

C Ilz me ont cogneu, ilz te ont cog. ilz le ont cog.
^{How have they knowen me, how have they the.}

C Come Ont ilz cogneu, come te ont ilz cogneu
^{how have they them.}
come les ont ilz cogneu.

^{They have nat knowen me, they have nat}

Ilz ne mont pas Congneu, Ilz ne tont pas con-
^{you, they have nat them}
gneu, Ilz ne les ont pas cogneu.

^{How have they nat knowen me, how have they.}

C Come Ne mont ilz pas cogneu, Come ne tont
^{nat the, how have they nat them.}
ilz pas cogneu, come ne les ont ilz pas cogneu.

C The preterit plusparfet.

^{I had knowen me, I had the, I had him.}

C Je mauoy cogneu, Je tauoy cog. Je lauoy co.
^{How had I knowen me, how had I the.}

C Come Mauoy ie cogneu, cōe tauoy ie cogneu,
^{how had I him.}
come lauoy ie cogneu,

^{I had nat knowen me, I had nat}

C Je ne mauoy pas cogneu, ie ne tauoy pas con-
gneu,

^{the, I had nat him.}
gneu, ie ne lauoy pas cogneu.

^{How had nat I knowen me, how had nat I}
C Come Ne mauoy ie pas cogneu, come ne tauoy

^{the, how had nat I him.}
ie pas cogneu, come ne lauoy ie pas cogneu.

C The seconde parlone.

^{Thou hadest knowen me, thou hadest the, thou had}

C Tu Mauoy cogneu, tu tauoy cogneu, tu la-

^{deu him,}
uoy cogneu.

^{How hadest thou knowen me, how hadest thou}
C Come Mauoy tu cogneu, come tauoy tu co-

^{the, how hadest thou him.}
gneu, come lauoy tu cogneu.

^{Thou hadest nat knowen me, thou hadest nat}

C Tu Ne mauoy pas cogneu, tu ne tauoy pas

^{the, thou hadest nat him.}
cogneu, tu ne lauoy pas cogneu.

^{How hadest thou nat knowen me, how hadest}

C Come Ne mauois tu pas cogneu, come ne ta-

^{thou nat the, how hadest thou nat him}

uoy tu pas cogneu, cōe ne lauois tu pas cogneu.

C The thy; de persone.

^{He had knowen me, he had the, he had him.}

C Il Mauoit cogneu, il tauoyt cog. il auoit cog.

^{How had he knowen me, how had he the.}

C Come Mauoit il cogneu cōe tauoit il cogneu,

^{how had he him.}

come lauoyt il cogneu.

^{He had nat knowen me, he had nat}

C Il Ne mauoit pas cogneu, il ne tauoit pas co-

^{the, he had nat him,}

gneu, il ne lauoyt pas cogneu.

^{How had nat he knowen me, how had nat he}

C Come ne mauoit il pas cogneu, come ne tauoit

^{the, how had nat he him.}

il pas cogneu, come ne lauoyt il pas cogneu.

Al.ii.

The

The plurel nombre

we had knowen vs, we had
Nous nous auions cogneu, vous vous auions
 you, we had them,
cogneu, vous les auions cogneu.

how had we knowen vs, how had
Come Nous auions nous cogneu, come vous
 we you, how had we them,
auions nous cogneu, come les auions no^r cogneu.

we had nat knowen vs, we had
Nous ne no^r auions pas cogneu, nous ne vous
 nat you, we had nat them,
auions pas cogneu, no^r ne les auions pas cogneu.

how had nat we knowen vs, how
Come Ne nous auions no^r pas cogneu, come
 had nat we you, how had nat
ne vous auions nous pas cogneu, come ne les au
 we them,
ions nous pas cogneu.

The seconde persone.

ye had knowen vs, ye had
Vous vous auiez cogneu, vous vous auiez co
 you, ye had them
gneu, vous les auiez cogneu.

how had ye knowen vs, how had ye
Come nous auiez vous cogneu, cõe vous au
 you, how had ye them,
iez vous cogneu, come les auiez vous cogneu.

ye had nat knowen vs, ye had nat
Vous ne nous auiez pas cogneu, vous ne vo^r
 you, ye had nat them,
auiez pas cogneu, vous ne les auiez pas cogneu

how had nat ye knowen me, how
Come Ne nous auiez vous pas cogneu, come
 had nat ye you, how had nat
ne vous auiez vo^r pas cogneu, come ne les auiez
 ye them,
vous pas cogneu.

The

The thyrde persone.

^{They had known vs, they had you, they}
Ils ^{had} ^{them.} **Mauroient** ^{had} ^{you,} **cogneu, ils** ^{had} ^{them.} **tauroient** ^{had} ^{you,} **cogneu, ils** ^{had} ^{them.} **les** ^{had} ^{them.} **auoient** ^{had} ^{you,} **cogneu.**

^{How had they known vs, how had they}
Come ^{you, how had they them.} **Mauroient** ^{you, how had they them.} **ils** ^{you, how had they them.} **cogneu, come** ^{you, how had they them.} **tauroient** ^{you, how had they them.} **ils** ^{you, how had they them.} **cogneu, come** ^{you, how had they them.} **les** ^{you, how had they them.} **auoient** ^{you, how had they them.} **ils** ^{you, how had they them.} **cogneu.**

^{They had nat known vs, they had nat}
Ils ^{you, they had nat them} **ne** ^{you, they had nat them} **nous** ^{you, they had nat them} **auoient** ^{you, they had nat them} **pas** ^{you, they had nat them} **cogneu, ils** ^{you, they had nat them} **ne** ^{you, they had nat them} **bous** ^{you, they had nat them} **a** ^{you, they had nat them} **uoient** ^{you, they had nat them} **pas** ^{you, they had nat them} **cogneu, ils** ^{you, they had nat them} **ne** ^{you, they had nat them} **les** ^{you, they had nat them} **auoient** ^{you, they had nat them} **pas** ^{you, they had nat them} **cogneu.**

^{How had they nat known vs, how}
Come ^{had they nat you, how had they} **ne** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **nous** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **auoient** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **ils** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **pas** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **cogneu, come** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **ne** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **bous** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **auoient** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **ils** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **pas** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **cogneu, come** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **ne** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **les** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **auoi** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **ent** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **ils** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **pas** ^{had they nat you, how had they} **cogneu.**

The future.

^{I shall know me, I shall the, I shall him}
Je ^{I shall know me, I shall the, I shall him} **me** ^{I shall know me, I shall the, I shall him} **cognoistray, ie** ^{I shall know me, I shall the, I shall him} **te** ^{I shall know me, I shall the, I shall him} **cognoistray, ie** ^{I shall know me, I shall the, I shall him} **le** ^{I shall know me, I shall the, I shall him} **cogno.**

^{How, shall I know me, how shall I the,}
Come ^{How, shall I know me, how shall I the,} **Je** ^{How, shall I know me, how shall I the,} **conoistray** ^{How, shall I know me, how shall I the,} **ie, come** ^{How, shall I know me, how shall I the,} **te** ^{How, shall I know me, how shall I the,} **cognoistray** ^{How, shall I know me, how shall I the,} **ie,** ^{How, shall I know me, how shall I the,} **come** ^{How, shall I know me, how shall I the,} **le** ^{How, shall I know me, how shall I the,} **cognoistray** ^{How, shall I know me, how shall I the,} **ie.**

^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat}
Je ^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat} **ne** ^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat} **me** ^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat} **cognoistray** ^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat} **pas, ie** ^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat} **ne** ^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat} **te** ^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat} **cognoi-** ^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat} **stray** ^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat} **pas, ie** ^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat} **ne** ^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat} **le** ^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat} **cognoistray** ^{I shall nat know me, I shall nat} **pas.**

^{How shall nat I know me, how shall}
Come ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **ne** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **me** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **cognoistray** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **ie** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **pas, come** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **ne** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **te** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **co** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **gnoistray** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **ie** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **pas, come** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **ne** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **le** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **cognoistray** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **ie** ^{How shall nat I know me, how shall} **pas.**

The seconde persone.

^{Thou shalt know me, thou shalt the, thou shalt him.}
Tu ^{Thou shalt know me, thou shalt the, thou shalt him.} **me** ^{Thou shalt know me, thou shalt the, thou shalt him.} **cognoistras, tu** ^{Thou shalt know me, thou shalt the, thou shalt him.} **te** ^{Thou shalt know me, thou shalt the, thou shalt him.} **cognoistras, tu** ^{Thou shalt know me, thou shalt the, thou shalt him.} **le** ^{Thou shalt know me, thou shalt the, thou shalt him.} **co.**

R.iii.

Come

How shall thou know me, how shall thou
Come Me cognoistras tu, come te cognoistras
the, how shall thou him.
tu, come le conoistras tu.

Thou shalt not know me, thou shalt nat
C Tu ne me cognoistras pas, tu ne te cognoistras
the, thou shalt nat him.
pas, tu ne le cognoistras pas.

How shall thou nat know me, how shall thou
C Come ne me cognoistras tu pas, come ne te co:
nat the, how shall thou nat him.
gnoistras tu pas, come ne le cognoistras tu pas.

C The thy; de parlone.

He shall know me, he shall the, he shall him.
C Il me cognoistra, il te cognoistra, il le cognoist.

How shall he know me, how shall he the.
C Come Me cognoistra il, come te cognoistra il,
how shall he him.
come le cognoistra il,

He shall nat know me, he shall nat
C Il ne me cognoistras pas, il ne te cognoistras
the, he shall nat him.
pas, il ne le cognoistras pas.

How shall nat he know me, how shall nat he
C Come ne me cognoistra il pas, come ne te cog:
the, how shall nat he him,
noistra il pas, come ne le cognoistra il pas.

C The plurell nombre.

we shall know vs, we shall
C Nous nous Cognoistrans, nous vous cognoi:
you, we shall them.
strans, nous les cognoistrans.

How shall we know vs, how shall we
C Come Nous cognoistrés nous, come vous co:
you, how shall we them.
gnoistrans nous, come les cognoistrans nous.

we shall nat know vs, we shall
C Nous ne nous cognoistrans pas, nous ne vo:

^{nat} ^{you, we} ^{shall} ^{not} ^{them.}
cognoistront pas, no? ne les cognoistront pas.

^{how} ^{shall} ^{nat} ^{we} ^{knowe} ^{vs,} ^{how}
Come ne nous cognoistront vous pas, come
^{shall} ^{nat} ^{we} ^{you, how} ^{shall} ^{nat}
ne vous cognoistront nous pas, come ne les con-
^{we} ^{them.}
gnoistront nous pas.

The seconde persone.

^{ye} ^{shall} ^{know} ^{vs, ye} ^{shall} ^{you,}
Cous no? cognoistres, vous vous cognoistres
^{ye} ^{shall} ^{them.}
vous les cognoistres.

^{how} ^{shall} ^{ye} ^{know} ^{vs, how} ^{shall}
Come nous cognoistres vous, come vous con-
^{ye} ^{you, how} ^{shall} ^{ye} ^{them,}
gnoistres vous, come les cognoistres vous.

^{ye} ^{shall} ^{nat} ^{knowe} ^{vs, ye} ^{shall} ^{not}
Cous ne vous Cognoistres pas, vous ne vo?
^{you, ye} ^{shall} ^{nat} ^{them}
cognoistres pas, vous ne les cognoistres pas,

^{how} ^{shall} ^{ye} ^{nat} ^{know} ^{vs,} ^{how}
Come ne nous cognoistres vous pas, come ne
^{shall} ^{ye} ^{nat} ^{you, how} ^{shall} ^{ye} ^{nat}
vous cognoistres vous pas, come ne les cognoi-
^{them}
stres vous pas.

The thy?de persone.

^{they} ^{shall} ^{know vs,} ^{they} ^{shall} ^{you,}
Ils nous cognoistront, ils vous cognoistront,
^{they} ^{shall} ^{them.}
ils les cognoistront.

^{how} ^{shall} ^{they} ^{know} ^{vs,} ^{how} ^{shall}
Come Ne nous cognoistront ils, come ne vous
^{they} ^{you, how} ^{shall} ^{they} ^{them.}
cognoistront ils, come ne les cognoistront ils.

^{they} ^{shall} ^{nat} ^{know} ^{vs,} ^{they} ^{shall}
Ils ne nous cognoistront pas, ils ne vo? cognoi-
stront

^{you, they shall nat them,}
stront pas, ilz ne les cognoistront pas.

^{How shall they nat know vs, how shall}
C Come ne nous cognoistrôt ilz pas, come ne vo⁹
^{they nat you, how shall they nat them,}
cognoistront ilz pas, cõe ne les cognoistrôt ilz pas.

The Imperatiue.

^{Know thou, know he or him, know we,}
C Cognoyz toy, conoyse soy, cognoissons nous,
^{know ye know they}
cognoisses vous, cognoissent eulz ou eles.

The future.

^{Take that thou know the, that he him selfe, that}
C Garde Que tu te cognoisse, q̃l se cognoisse, que
^{we know vs, that ye you}
nous no⁹ cognoissons, que vous vous cognoisses
^{that they them selfe,}
que ilz se cognoissent.

The future negatyue.

^{Do that thou knoweth nat, that he knoweth nat. that}
C faitz Que tu ne cognoisse, q̃l ne cognoisse, que
^{we knoweth nat, that ye nat that}
nous ne cognoissons, que vous ne cognoisses, q̃lz
^{they nat.}
ne cognoissent.

The optatyue future.

^{I pray you that I may knowe that thou}
C Je vous pryē que ie congnoisse, que tu con-
^{know,}
noisse. &c. Wyke the Imperatyue.

The p̃terit imparfet

^{I yf I knew, yf thou yf he}
C Se ie cogneusse, se tu ȝgneusse, se il cogneusse
^{yf we knew, yf you yf they knew.}
se no⁹ cogneussions, se vo⁹ cogneussies, se vo⁹ sent
The

The p̄terit parfet.

^{with my wyll} **That** ^{I haue knowne,} ^{that thou haue}

Ma boullente ^{that he hath} **Que iaye** ^{that we haue} **cogneu, que tu ayes**

cogneu, quil ayt ^{that ye haue} **cogneu, que nous eyons** ^{that they haue knowne,} **cogneu,**

que vous ayes **cogneu, quilz ayent** **cogneu.**

The p̄terit plusparfet.

^{would to god,} ^{that I had knowne,} ^{that thou hadest}

Pleust a dieu, q̄ ieusse **cogneu, q̄ tu eusses** **cog.**

^{that he had} ^{that we had} ^{that ye had} **quil eust** **cogneu, que nous eussions** **q̄ vous eusses**

^{that they had knowne,}

quilz eussent **cogneu.**

The subiunctyue p̄sent & the p̄terit is lyke
p̄ optatyue, puttynge befoze p̄ verbe, **Que** oꝝ **cōc** &

The fyꝛste future of the coniunctyue.

^{whan} ^{I shall knowe} ^{thou shall be} ^{shall know.}

Quais **Que ie** **cognoisse, que tu, quil** **cognoisse,**

^{we shall} ^{ye shall} ^{they shall know}

Que no^r **cognoissōs, q̄ vo^r** **cognoisses, quilz sent.**

The seconde future.

^{whan} ^{I shulde knowe,} ^{thou shulde be}

Quant ie **cognoistroye, q̄ tu** **cognoistras, quil**

^{shulde} ^{we shuld} ^{ye shulde}

cognoistroyt, Que nous **cognoistrions, que vous**

^{they shuld know.}

cognoistries, quilz **cognoistroient.**

^{To know}

^{To haue}

The infinityue, Cognoistre, The p̄terit, Auoir

^{knowne,}

^{To know}

^{for to knowe}

cogneu, The Gerūdis, A cognoist, Vo^r **cognoistre**

^{in knowynge}

^{I the}

En cognoissāt. The supin oꝝ ouerthrowen, Je te

^{withe} ^{knowe}

souchaite, Cogneu. And so ende this coniugation

D.

Here

Here doth folowe the coniugacion of this ver
be, Am. The whych is as an instrumēt wher
by we do expresse by our wordes all verbes passi
ues fewe except, and all that we do suffre, the why
che may be tourned lyke the verbe pcedēt, As Je
me, ie te, ie le suis. But for to eschew prolixite we
shal tourne hi but. vi. maner ways in euery plone.

^{I am, why am I}
I Je suis, Pourquoi Suis ie.

^{I am nat, why am nat I.}
I Je ne suis pas, Come Ne suis ie pas.

^{Thou art nat, why art thou:}
Tu es, Come es tu.

^{Thou art nat, why art nat thou:}
Tu nes pas Pourquoi Nes tu pas.

^{He is, why is he:}
Il est, Pourquoi est il.

^{He is nat, why is he nat.}
Il nest pas, Come nest il pas.

The plurell nombze.

^{we be, why be we,}
Nous sommes, Pourquoi Sommes nous.

^{we be nat, why be nat we,}
No^r ne sommes pas, Pourq. Ne sommes nous pas.

^{ye be why be ye,}
Vous estes, Pourquoi Estes vous.

^{ye be nat, why be ye nat,}
Vous nestes pas, Pourquoi Nestes vous pas.

^{They be, why be they,}
Ils sont, Pourquoi Sont ilz.

^{They be nat, why be nat they,}
Ils ne sont pas, Pourquoi Ne sont ilz pas.

The pterit imparfet.

Note that the pterit imperfet & perfet, haue but
one exposition in this verbe.

Nestote

^{I was beynge. why was I.}
Esteoye Pourquoy esteoye ie.

^{I was nat. why was nat I.}
Je nestoye pas, Pourquoy Esteoye ie pas.

^{Thou was. why was thou.}
Tu esteoyes, Pourquoy Nestoyes tu.

^{Thou was nat. why was nat thou}
Tu nestoyes pas, Pourquoy Nestoyes tu pas.

^{he was why was he.}
Il estoit, Pourquoy Estoit il.

^{he was nat. why was nat he.}
Il nestoit pas, Pourquoy Nestoit il pas.

The plurell nombre.

^{we were. why were we.}
Nous estions, Pourquoy Estions nous.

^{we were. nat. why were we nat.}
Nous nestions pas, Pourq. Nestions nous pas.

^{ye were. why were ye.}
Vous esties, Pourquoy Esties vous.

^{ye were nat. why were ye nat.}
Vous nesties pas, Pourquoy Nesties vous pas.

^{They were why were they.}
Ils nestoient, Pourquoy Nestoient ilz.

^{They were nat. why were they nat.}
Ils nestient pas, Pourquoy Nestoient ilz pas.

The preterit perfect.

^{I was. why was I.}
Je fus Pourquoy Fus ie.

^{I was nat. why was nat I.}
Je ne fus point, Pourquoy Ne fus ie point.

^{Thou was. why was thou.}
Tu fus, Pourquoy Fus tu.

^{Thou was nat. why was nat thou.}
Tu ne fus pas, Pourquoy Ne fus tu pas.

^{he was why was he.}
Il fust, Pourquoy Fust il.

^{he was nat. why was nat he.}
Il ne fust pas, Pourquoy Ne fust il pas.

D.ii.

The

The plurell nombze.

^{we were, why were we}
Nous fusmes pas, **Pourquoy** fusmes nous.
^{we were nat, why were nat we}
Nous ne fusmes pas, **Pourq.** **Ne** fusmes no^r pas
^{ye were, why were ye, i}
Vous ne fustes, **Pourquoy** fustes vous.
^{ye were nat, why were nat ye}
Vous ne fustes pas, **Pourq.** **Ne** fustes vous pas.
^{they were, why were they}
Ilz furent, **Pourquoy** furent ilz.
^{they were nat, why were they nat}
Ilz ne furent pas, **Pourquoy** **Ne** furent ilz pas.

The pzetedit infinitif.

^{I haue ben, why haue i ben,}
Jay este, **Pourquoy** **Ay** ie pas este.
^{i haue nat ben, why haue nat i ben.}
Je nay pas este, **Pourquoy** **Nay** ie pas este.
^{Thou hast ben, why hast thou ben,}
Tu as este, **Pourquoy** **As** tu este.
^{Thou hast not ben, why hast not thou ben,}
Tu nas pas este, **Pourquoy** **Nas** tu pas este.
^{He hath ben, why hath he ben}
Il a este, **Pourquoy** **A** il este.
^{He hath nat ben, why hath nat he ben}
Il na pas este, **Pourquoy** **Aa** il pas este.

The plurell nombze,

^{we haue ben, why haue we ben,}
Nous auons este, **Pourquoy** **Auōs** nous este.
^{we haue nat ben, why haue we nat ben,}
Nous nauōs pas este, **Pourq.** **nauōs** no^r pas este
^{ye haue ben, why haue ye ben,}
Vous aues este, **Pourquoy** **Aues** vous este.
^{ye haue nat ben, why haue nat ye ben,}
vous naues pas este, **Pourq.** **Naues** vo^r pas este.
^{they haue ben, why haue they ben.}
Ilz ont este, **Pourquoy** **Ont** ilz este.

Ilz

^{they have nat ben, why have nat they ben,}
Ilz nont pas este, Pourquoi Nont ilz pas este.

The p[re]terit most p[er]fect.

^{I had ben, why had I ben,}
Je nauoy este, Come Nauoy ie este.

^{I had nat ben, why had nat I ben,}
Je nauoy pas este. Come Nauoy ie pas este.

^{Thou hadest ben, why hadest thou ben,}
Tu nauoy este, Come Nauoy tu este.

^{Thou hadest nat ben, why hadest nat thou ben,}
Tu nauoy pas este, Come Nauoy tu pas este.

^{He had ben, why had he ben,}
Il auoit este, Come Auoit il este.

^{He had nat ben, why had nat he ben,}
Il nauoit pas este, Come Nauoit il pas este.

The plurell nomb[er].

^{we had ben, why had we ben,}
Nos auo[is] este, Pourquoi Auo[is] no[us] este.

^{we had nat ben, why had nat we ben,}
Nos nauo[is] pas este, Po. q. Nauo[is] no[us] pas este.

^{ye had ben, why had ye ben,}
Vous auies este, Pourquoi Auez vous este.

^{ye had nat ben, why had nat ye ben,}
Vo[us] nauies pas este, Pourq. Auez vo[us] pas este.

^{They had ben, why had they ben,}
Ilz auoient este, Come auoient ilz pas este.

^{They had nat ben, why had they nat ben,}
Ilz nauoient pas este, Come Nauoi[en]t ilz pas este.

The future.

^{I shall be, why shall I be,}
Je seray, Come Seray ie.

^{I shall nat be, why shall nat I be,}
Je ne seray pas, Come Ne seray ie pas.

^{Thou shalt be, why shalt thou be,}
Tu seras, Pourquoi Seras tu.

^{Thou shalt nat be, why shalt thou nat be,}
Tu ne seras pas, Pourquoi Ne seras tu pas.

^{he shall be, why shall he be,}
Il sera, Pourquoi Sera il.
^{he shall nat be, why shall nat be be,}
Il ne sera pas, Pourquoi Ne sera il pas.

The plurell nombre.
^{we shall be, why shall we be,}
Nous serons, Pourquoi Serons nous
^{we shall nat be, why shall we nat be}
Nous ne serons pas, Pourq. Ne serons nous pas
^{ye shall be, why shall ye be,}
Vous seres, Pourquoi Seres vous.
^{ye shall nat be, why shall nat ye be,}
Vous ne seres pas, Pourquoi Ne seres vo^s pas.
^{They shall be, why shall they be,}
Ilz seront, Pourquoi Seront ilz.
^{They shall nat be, why shall nat they be,}
Il ne seront pas, Pourquoi ne seront ilz pas.

The Imperatvie.
^{Be thou, be he: Be we, be ye}
Soyz toy, soyt il. Soyons nous, soyez vous,
^{be they}
soient ilz,

Both the futures,
^{Do That thou be, that he be, That we be}
Fais, Que tu soyz, quil soyt, Que nous soions
^{that ye be, that they be.}
que vous soies, quilz soient.
^{Do That thou be nat, that he be nat,}
Fais, Que tu ne soyz pas, quil ne soyt poynt,
^{That we be nat, that ye be nat,}
Que nous ne soyons pas, que vous ne soyez pas,
^{that they be nat.}
quilz ne soient pas.

The optatiue.
^{I pray you that ye be, that thou be, that he be}
Je vous prie que ie soie, que tu soyz, quil soyt.
Que

That we be, that ye be, that they be.
Que nous soyons, q̄ vous soyez quilz soient.

CThe p̄terit imparfet
wolde to god that I were, that thou, that he,
Pleust a dieu que ie fusse, q̄ tu fusses, quil fusse
That we, that ye, that they were.
Que nous fussions, que vous fusses quilz fussent

CThe p̄terit parfet.
with my will That I haue ben, that thou
A ma voullente Que iaye este que tu ayes este
that he, That we, that ye
quil ayt este. Que nous ayons este, q̄ vous ayez este
that they haue ben.
quilz ayent este. The p̄terit plusq̄p̄.

Oh if I had ben, if thou haddest ben, if he
O si ieusse este, se tu eusses este, sil eust este. Se
we had ben, if ye if they
no^r eussions este, se vous eusses este, silz eussent este.

CThe coniunctiue is both in the p̄sent and p̄terit, lyke the optatiue.

CThe fyrst future, whan I shal be, thou
Mais Que soy, que tu soys
he we ye
quil soit, Mais que nous soyons, que vous soyez,
they, shal be.
quilz soient.

CThe future bozowed of the potencia ll mode,

I shulde be, thou shulde be, he shulde be, we shulde be
Je seroye, tu seroy, il seroyt. Nous serions,
ye shulde be, they shulde be.
vous seriez, ilz seroient.

CThe infinitiue. Estre. The p̄terit, Auoir este.

Gerundif. Pour estre, En estant, &c. And thus
finishe this coniugation.

Also

Also it is to be noted, that there ben certayne
 answeres both in the affyrmatyow and nega-
 tion of a thyng, as whan one doth say, I am, and
 ther may saye, ye be nat, where he may answer a
 gayne, I am, & the other graunting the same shal
 say, so are ye. And likewise whan one doth affirme
 a thyng by way of negatyon, as whan he doth say
 I am nat, if any wyl deny the same, he shal saye,
 ye be, & if he wyl graunt vnto it, he shal saye,
 moze are ye. For ensample of the whiche, I wyl
 make therof a coniugacyon full requysyte & neces-
 sary to the French tonge. But ye shall vnderstāde
 that thre verbes onely shal serue you to this pur-
 pose, that is to saye, Haue, Do and am, For yf one
 say, I am, ye maye saye, ye be nat. I haue, ye haue-
 nat, and, I do, ye do nat, the whiche thre ben prin-
 cipall in this rule.

The indicatiue of affyrmation.

^{I am} Je suis ^{I am nat} Non suis ^{But I am} Sy suis ^{Do am I} Ce suis mon ^{we be} No^s sommes ^{we be nat} Non sommes ^{But we be} Sy sommes ^{Do be we} Ce sommes mō	^{Thou art} Tu es ^{thou art nat} Non es ^{But thou art} Sy es ^{Do arte thou} Ce es mon ^{ye be} Vous estes ^{ye be nat} Non estes ^{But ye be} Sy estes ^{Do be ye} Ce estes mon	^{He is} Il est ^{He is nat} Non est ^{But he is} Sy est ^{Do is he} Ce est mon ^{They be} Ils sont ^{They be nat,} Non sont ^{But they be.} Sy sont ^{Do be they.} Ce sont
---	---	--

And so forth thozow al the tēces and modes of
 All

^{I was, I was nat,}
all the tother twayne . As ^Iestoye, ^{non}estoye,
^{But I was, so was I} ^I sayde, ^I ded nat
^{Sy}estoye. ^{cestoye} mon. ^{Ie} ^{Dy}soye, ^{non} saysoye,
^{But I ded, so ded I.} ^I had, ^I had nat
^{Sy} saysoye, ^{Ce} saysoie mon . ^I auoye, ^{non} auoye,
^{But I had, so had I.} ^I had ^I had nat ^I mal haue
^{Sy} auoye, ^{Ce} auoye mon. ^{Ie} eus, ^{non} eus. ^I aray

^I Mall nat, but ^I Mal, so Mal ^I,
non aray, ^{sy} aray, ^{Ce} aray mon. whyche thre woꝝ=
des Mal serue you to any verbes signifieng either
doing oꝝ sufferng. **E**xample foꝝ negation.

^I am nat, ^{But I am.} ^I am nat, ^{no more} am ^I.
Ene suis pas, ^{sy} suis. ^{ne} suis, ^{ce} ne suis mon.

^I do nat, but ^I do, ^I do nat, ^{no more} do ^I.
^{Ie} ne fay pas. ^{Sy} fay. ^{non} fay. ^{Ce} ne fay mon.

^I haue nat, ^{But I haue.} ^I haue nat, ^{no more} haue ^I.
Ene nay pas. ^{Sy} ay. ^{non} ay. ^{Ce} nay mon.

^Thou hast nat, ^{But thou hast.} ^Thou hast nat, ^{no more} hast thou
Etu nas pas. ^{Sy} as. ^{non} as. ^{Ce} nas mon. &c.

Touchyng the coniugation interrogatpue, As
^I am ^I, ^{do} ^I, ^{haue} ^I oꝝ ^{no},
^{Suis} ie, ^{fais} ie, ^{ay} ie, ou non . ye shall answer,
^{Ouy}, ^{Reny}, ^{non}, & to y^e interrogation negatpue.

^I am nat ^I, ^{do} nat ^I, ^{haue} nat ^I.
as ^{ne} suis ie pas, ^{ne} fay ie pas, ^{ne} ay ie pas ye shal
answer as is said befoꝝe in the rāple of the negatiō
wherfoꝝe this is sufficient foꝝ this pꝛesent rule.

A nother coniugation of these two verbes in latyn, ^Iado and ^{Co}
whiche both verbes of one signification signifyeth in englysh, ^I
go, the which go, is defectpue in the frenche tongue, wherfoꝝe the tone
must helpe the tother.

Ethe pꝛesent of the shewyng moode.
^I go, why go ^I.

Ene voy, ^{Pourquoy} ^{Uoy} ie.

^I go nat, why go nat ^I.
^{Ie} ne voy poꝝnt, ^{Pourquoy} ^{ne} voy ie poꝝnt.

P.

Tu

^{Thou goest, why goest thou.}
Tu vas Pourquoi vas tu.

^{Thou goest nat, why goest thou nat.}
Tu ne vas pas. Pourquoi Ne vas tu pas.

^{He goeth, why goeth he.}
Il va, Pourquoi va il.

^{He goeth nat, why goeth nat he.}
Il ne va pas, Pourquoi. Ne va il pas.
The plurell nombre.

^{we go, why go we.}
Nous allons, Pourquoi Allons nous.

^{we go nat, why go nat we.}
Nous nallons pas. Pourquoi Nallons nos pas

^{ye go, why go ye.}
Vous ailes, Pourquoi Allez vous.

^{ye go nat, why go nat ye.}
Vous nalles point, Pourquoi Nalles vo^r point.

^{They go, why go they.}
Ils vont, Pourquoi vont ils.

^{They go nat, why go nat they.}
Ils ne vont mie, Pourquoi Ne vont ils mie.

The p^reterit imparfet,
^{I dyd go, why dyd I go.}

Jallois, Pourquoi Allois ie.

^{I dyd nat go, why dyd nat I go.}
Je nallois pas. Pourquoi nallois ie pas.

^{Thou dydest go, why dydest thou go.}
Tu allois Pourquoi allois tu,

^{Thou dydest nat go, why dydest thou nat go.}

Tu nallois point, Pourquoi Nallois tu point.

^{He dyd go, why dyd he go.}

Il alloit, Pourquoi alloit il.

^{He dyd nat go, why dyd nat he go.}

Il nalloit pas, Pourquoi nalloit il pas

The plurell nombre.

^{we dyd go, why dyd we go.}
Nous allions, Pourquoi Allions nous.

^{we dyd nat go, why dyd nat we go.}

Nous nallions mie, Pourquoi Nallions nos mie

Vous

^{ye dyd go. how dyd ye go.}
Vous alliez, Coment alliez vous.

^{ye dyd nat go. how dyd nat ye go.}
Vous nalliez point, Comēt nalliez vous point,

^{They dyd go. how dyd they go.}
Ilz alloient, Come alloient ilz.

^{They dyd nat go. how dyd they nat go.}
Ilz nalloient pas, Come nalloient ilz pas.

¶ The preterit perfect.

^{I went. how went I.}
Jalay, Coment alay ie.

^{I went nat. how went nat I.}
Je nallay pas, Coment nallay ie pas.

^{Thou wentst how wentst thou.}
Tu alas, Come Alas tu.

^{Thou wentst nat. how wentst nat thou.}
Tu nalas mie, Come nalas tu mie.

^{He went. how went he.}
Il alla, Coment Alla il:

^{He went nat. how went nat he.}
Il nala point, Coment nala il point.

¶ The plurell nombre.

^{we went. how went we.}
Nous alasmes, Come Alasmes nous.

^{we went nat. how went we nat.}
Nous nalasmes point, Cōc nalasmes nous point.

^{ye went. why went ye.}
Vous alastes, Pourq. Alastes vous.

^{ye went nat. why went ye nat.}
Vous nalastes pas, Pourq. nalastes vous pas.

^{They went. why went they.}
Ilz allèrent, Pourq. Allèrent ilz.

^{They went nat. why went nat they.}
Ilz nallèrent mie, Pourq. nallèrent ilz mie.

¶ The preterit infinitif.

^{I haue gone. how haue I gone.}
Jay allē, Coment ay ie allē.

^{I haue nat gone. how haue nat I gone.}
Je nay pas allē, Coment Nay ie pas allē.

P. ii.

Tu

^{Thou hast gone, why hast thou gone.}
Tu as alle. Pourquoi As tu alle.

^{Thou hast nat gone, why hast thou nat gone.}
Tu nas pas alle. Pourquoi Nas tu pas alle.

^{He hath gone, why hath he gone.}
Il a alle. Pourquoi Il a alle.

^{He hath nat gone, why hath nat he gone.}
Il na poynt alle. Pourquoi Na il point alle.

The plurell nombre.

^{we haue gone, why haue we gone}
Nous auons alle. Pourquoi Auôs nous alle.

^{we haue nat gone, why haue we nat gone}
No⁹ nauôs pas alle. Pourq. Nauôs no⁹ pas alle.

^{ye haue gone, why haue ye gone.}
Vous aues alle. Pourq. Aues vous alle.

^{No⁹ naues pas alle. Pourq. Naues vo⁹ pas alle.}
No⁹ naues pas alle. Pourq. Naues vo⁹ pas alle.

^{They haue gone, how haue they gone.}
Ilz ont alle. Coment Ont ilz alle.

^{They haue nat gone, how haue they nat gone.}
Ilz nont pas alle. Come Nont ilz pas alle.

The preterit plusparfet.

^{I had gone how had I gone.}
J'auoy alle. Coment Auoy ie alle.

^{I had nat gone, how had nat I gone.}
Je nauoy point alle. Coment Nauoy ie point alle.

^{Thou hadest gone, why hadest thou gone.}
Tu auois alle. Pourquoi Auois tu alle.

^{Thou hadest nat gone, why hadest thou nat gone}
Tu nauois poit alle. Pourq, Nauois tu poit alle.

^{He had gone how had he gone.}
Il auoit alle. Come Auoit il alle.

^{He had nat gone, how had nat he gone.}
Il nauoit pas alle. Come Nauoit il pas alle.

The plurell nombre.

^{we had gone how had we gone.}
Nous auions alle. Coment Auions nous alle.

^{we had nat gone, how had we nat gone}
No⁹ nauîôs poit alle. Comêt nauîôs no⁹ poit alle.

Vous

^{ye had gone, why had ye gone.}
Vous auies alle, Pourquoi auies vous alle.

^{ye had nat gone why had nat ye gone.}
Vous nauies mie alle, Po. q. Nauiez vo? mie alle.

^{They had gone, why had they gone.}
Ils Auoient alle, Pourquoi Auoyent ils alle.

^{They had nat gone, why had they nat gone.}
Ils nauoiët point alle, Po. q. nauoiët ils point alle

C The future.

^{I shall go, why shall I go.}

C Je pray, Pourquoi pray ie.

^{I shall nat go, why shall nat I go.}

C Je npray pas, Pourquoi Npray ie pas.

^{Thou shalt go, how shalt thou go.}

C Tu prās, Comēnt prās tu.

^{Thou shalt nat go, howe shalt nat thou go.}

C Tu niras pas, Comēnt niras tu pas.

^{He shall go, howe shall he go.}

C Il yra, Comēnt yra il.

^{He shall nat go, howe shall nat he go.}

C Il nira point, Comēnt nira il point.

C The plurell nombze.

^{we shall go, why shall we go.}

C Nous yrons, Pourquoy yrons nous.

^{we shall nat go, why shall nat we go.}

C Nous niron pas, Pourquoi Niron nous pas.

^{ye shall go, why shall ye go.}

C Vous yres, Pourq. yres vous.

^{ye shall nat go, why shall nat ye go.}

C Vous nires pas, Pourq. Nires vous pas.

^{They shall go, howe shall they go.}

C Ils yront, Comēnt yront ils.

^{They shall nat go, howe shall they nat go.}

C Ils niron mie, Comēnt Niron ils mie.

C The imperatpue.

^{Go thou, Go he, all one. Go we}

C Va toy, Vlle luy, Vpse luy. Alons nous.

^{Go ye, Go they.}

C Allez vous, Voissent ou aillent eulx.

The first future.

^{Do that thou go, that he go,}
Fais que tu voise ou aille, quil voise ou aille,
^{that we go, that ye go, that they go.}
que no^s allons, que vous alles, ql voysēt ou aillēt

The seconde future negatif,

^{Bepe That thou go nat, all one}
Garde, Que tu ne aille point, q tu ne voise point
^{that he go nat, all one That we go nat,}
quil naile point, ql ne voise point, Que no^s nallōs
^{that ye go nat, that they go nat. all one}
que vo^s nalles, qlz ne allēt point qlz ne voisēt point

The Optatif.

^{would to god, O I pray you that I go.}
Pleust a dieu, Ou ie vo^s prie, q iaille ou voise,
^{that thou go, that he go, That we go, that ye}
que tu ailles, que il aille, Que nous allōs, que vo^s
^{go, that they go}
alles, Que ils allent, ou voissent.

The p^reterit imparfet.

^{with my will, That I went, that thou went, that}
Ma boullēte, Que iallasse, que tu allasses, q
^{he went, that we went, that ye went,}
il allast, que nous allissions, que vous allissiēs,
^{that they went.}
quilz allassent.

The p^reterit parfet.

^{would to god that I have gone, that thou have}
Alla miēne boullente, Que iay alle, que tu ayes
^{gone, that he have gone, That we have gone, that ye}
alle, quil ayt alle, Que nous aions alle, que vous
^{have gone, that they have gone.}
ayes alle, Quilz ayent alle,

The

The preterit plusparfet.

O if I had gone, if thou had gone, if he had gone
Csy ieusse alle, **S**e tu eusse alle, se il eust alle,
 if we had gone, if ye had gone, if they
Se no^s eussions alle, se vous eusses alle, se ilz euss^t
 had gone,
 sent alle.

Ye may make a future of the present, Sayeng
 with my will. That I may go anone &c. **A**il

Ama boullète, **Q**ue ie aille tantost et cetera q^u
 one
 ie voyse tantost. &c.

The coniunctif presēt & thre pterites is lyke the
 optatif. Sayenge. Come o^r quant, befoze the ver^b
 be, leupnge. **A** ma boullente &c.
 as whan, wolde to god

The future bowoweth of the potenciall moode
 whyche maye be tourned six maner of wayes after
 the indicatif, o^r elles .xviii. after the seconde con-
 function. **J**e prape, tu praps, il prapt. **N**ous prions
 ye shuld go, thou he we shuld go.
 vous pries, ilz praient.
 ye shuld go, they shuld go

The seconde future.

Mais **Q**ue ie aille, que ie voyse, que tu ailles,
 whan I shall go, all one whan thou shalt go
 all one whan he shuld go, all one whan we shuld
 que tu voises, que il aille, que il voise. **Q**ue nous
 go whan ye shall go, whan they shal go, all one
 allons, que vous alles, quilz aillent quilz voient.

The indifinitif. Aller. **The preterit, Estre**
 gone, **alle,** **The Gerundif. Allant.** **Finis.**
 going. Here

Here foloweth another conjugation, whiche may be turned .xxxvi. maner wayes lyke the precedent, or els .xii. in euery parson, addyng Me, te, le. lyke the fyrst conjugation, but for to eschewe prolixite & shalbe synge.

^{I se, thou seest, he seeth, we se, ye se}
Ie voy, tu voy, il voit. Nous veons, vous vo
^{they se.}
 ies, ilz voient. **P**reterit imparfet.

^{I dyd se, thou dedest se, he dyd se, we dyd se, ye}
Ie veoye, tu veoyes, il veoit, Nous veions, vo
^{dyd se, they dyd se.}
 yeies, ilz vetoient. **P**reterit parfet.

^{I saw, thou saw, he saw, we saw, ye}
Ie veis, tu veis, il veist. Nous veismes, vous
^{saw they saw.}
 veistes, ilz vetrent. **P**reterit indiffinitif.

^{I haue sene, thou haste sene, he hath sene, we haue sene,}
Iay veu, tu as veu, il a veu. Nous auons veu,
^{ye haue sene, they haue sene,}
 vous aues veu, ilz ont veu. **P**reterit most pfet.

^{I had sene, thou hadest he had we}
Iauois veu, tu auois veu, il auoit veu. Nous
^{had sene, ye had they had sene,}
 auions veu, vous aues veu, ilz auoient veu.

The future.

^{I Mall se, thou Malt, he Mall we Mall se}
Ie voiray, tu voiras, il voira, Nous voirons,
^{ye Mall they Mall se.}
 vous voires, ilz voiront. **T**he imperatif.

^{Se thou or he, se we, se ye se}
Vois toy ou luy voions nous, voies vous voi
^{they.}
 ent eulx, ceulx, elles, celles,

Both futures, affirmatif and negatif.

^{Do that thou seest or that thou seest nat, that}
Fais que tu voie, ou que tu ne voie point, quil
 voit

^{seeth or that he seeth nat,} ^{That we se or that}
boie, ou quil ne boie point. Que no⁹ boyons, ou q^u
^{we se nat, that ye se or that ye}
nous ne boions point, que vous boies, ou que ne
^{se nat, that they se or that they seeth nat}
boies point, quilz boient, ou quelles ne boiēt point

¶ The optatif p^resent.

^{wolde to god} ^{Or I pray you, that I}
¶ Ma miene boullente. Ou ie vous p^rye ^{Que ie}
^{may se, that thou mayst se that he may se, that we may se}
boie, que tu boies, quil boie. Que nous boions,
^{that ye may se, that they may se.}
que vous beies, quilz beient. **¶ P^reterit implet.**

^{wolde to god that I could se, that} ^{that he}
¶ Pleust a dieu q^u ie beisse, q^u tu beisses, quil beisse,
^{That we could se, that ye} ^{that they}
Que nous beissions, q^u vous beisses, qlz beissent.

¶ P^reterit parfet.

^{with my will} ^{That I have sene, that thou}
¶ Ma boullente. Que iaye veu, que tu ayes veu
^{that he} ^{That we have sene,} ^{that ye}
quil ate veu, que nous aions veu, q^u vous aiez veu
^{that they}
quilz aient veu. **¶ Plusparfet.**

^{Or if I had sene, if thou hadest} ^{if he had sene}
¶ O se teusse veu, se tu eusses veu, sil eusse veu.
^{if we had} ^{if ye had} ^{if they had sene}
Se nous eussions veu, se vo⁹ eussies, silz eussēt veu

¶ The subiunctif is like the Optatif. The f^ryste
^{I wolde se,}
future of the subiunctiue is, Je voiroie, boyrons,
voiroit, boirions, boiries, boiroient.

^{when I shall se,}
¶ The secōde future. Mais ^{Que ie} ^{boie, q^u tu} ^{boie}
^{he} ^{we} ^{you} ^{they}
quil boie, Que no⁹ boiōs, q^u vous boies, qlz boiēt.

^{To se} ^{To have sene, seying.}
¶ The infinitif. Veoir. P^reterit. Avoir veu, voiāt.

¶ Fins.

¶

¶

A Nother coniuga. vpon howe do you, & howe do ye fare, & if ye do take the verbe after the fyrst coniugation, saieng Je porte, porte ie, pourq. porte ie &c. And lyke wyle of ie say, say ie &c. ye shal tourne it. xxxvi. wayes in one tense, and if ye turne it after the seconde coniugation, ye shall haue an hundred and. viii. wayes in one tense, addynge to it Me, te, le, Nous nous, vous vous, ilz se.

How do I fare, or beare me, how dost thou fare, or beare the, howe
Coment me porte ie, coment te porte tu, coment se
porte he fare, howe do we fare: howe do
porte il, Coment nous portōs nous, coment vous
portez vous, how do they fare,
portez vous, coment se portent ilz.

The p̄terit imparfet.

Howe dyd I, howe dedest thou,
Coment Me portoy ie, coment te portois tu,
howe dyd he. howe dyd we beare vs,
coment se portoit il. Coment Nous portions nous,
howe dyd ye, howe dyd they
coment vous portiez vous, coment se portient ilz.

The p̄terit parfet.

howe dyd I, howe dedest thou, howe
Coment Me portay ie, coment te portes tu, coment
dyd he howe dyd we beare vs. howe
se porta il. Coment. Nous portasmes nous, coment
dyd ye beare you, howe dyd they beare them,
vous portastes vous, coment se porterent ilz.

The p̄terit indiffinitif.

Howe haue I borne me, howe haue I
Coment may ie porte, coment Tay ie porte, co.
hath he howe haue we borne vs, howe
Sa il porte. Comt Nous auons nous porte, comt
haue ye borne you, howe haue they borne them.
Nous aues vous porte, coment Se ont ilz porte.
The

The p̄terit most p̄fect.

How ^{had I borne me,} **howe** ^{hadest thou}
Coment ^{howe} **Auoy** ^{ye borne} **te porte,** **co.** **Tauoy** ^{had they borne them.} **tu porte,**
co. **Uous** ^{howe} **auies** ^{had he borne hym,} **vo^r porte,** **co.** **Se** ^{howe} **auoient** ^{had we borne vs,} **ilz porte**
co. **Se** **auoit** **il porte.** **Co.** **Nous** **auios** **nous porte,**

The future.

Howe ^{shall I beare me,} **howe** ^{halt thou bere the,}
Comet **De** **porteray** **ie,** **Comit** **Te** **porteras** **tu.**
^{howe} **co.** **Se** **portera** **il,** **Coment** **Nous** **porterons** **nous.**
^{howe} **co.** **Se** **porteront** **ilz.**
^{howe} **coment** **Uous** **porteres** **vous,** **co.** **Se** **porteront** **ilz.**

The Imperatpue, Optatiue, and Coniunctiue.
 may nat serue wyth this worde, **Coment,** saue one
 ly the future of the Potencial moode, whyche is,
^{I shulde beare, thou shuldest he shulde} **Porteroie,** **porterois,** **porteroit,** ^{we shulde beare, ye} **Porterions** **porte-**
^{shuld} **ries,** **porterolent.** ^{they shulde beare}
 And if ye wyll go thorow the
 sayd modes, ye shall folowe the terminatio of this
 verbe, **I go,** whiche is sette befoze.

And touchyng, **Howe** **do** **you,** **ye** **shall** **euere** **put**
^{howe} **Le,** ^{do} **befoze** ^I **the** ^{howe} **verbe,** **sayeng.** **Comet** **Le** **say** **ie** **co.**
^{doest thou, howe doest he.} **Le** **fais** **tu,** **co.** **Le** **fait** **il,** **co.** **Faisons** **nous,** **faictes**
^{ye do they} **bous,** **font** **ilz,** **ou** **elles.** **And** **lykewise** **of** **all** **the** **p̄te**
^{howe} **teritis** **sayeng.** **Comet** **Le** **faisoi** **ie** **ac.** **Coment** **Le**
^{I.} **feiz** **ie,** **comit** **Lay** **ie** **fait,** **co.** **Lauoy** **ie** **fait,** **co.** **Le** **fe**
^{I do, howe shulde I do.} **ray** **ie,** **coment** **Le** **feroy** **ie.** **ac.**

Finis.

There foloweth the coniugation of a verbe defe
ctiue

ctyfe in frenche, whych is I am wont, because it is
a verbe rare and seldome bled. ^{I am wont, thou art} Je seulz, tu seulz
^{he is wont, we be} il seult. ^{wonte, ye be} Nous seulmes, vous seultes, ilz seulent.
^{wonte, they be wonte,}

The p̄terit imparfet.

^{I was} Je souloie, ^{thou} tu sollois, ^{he} il solloit, ^{we} Nous soulions,
^{ye} vous soulies, ^{they} ilz souloient. **P̄terit p̄fet.**

^{I was.} Je seulz, tu seulz, il seult, Nous seulmes, vous
seultes, ilz seulent. There is no more of this ver-
be, for yf we p̄cedde any further, we do say I haue
^{coustume} had customed, ^{I auoye,} I had, ^{et} & ^{I eray de coustume,} I shall custome, & so forth.

Anoder & be defectif whych is, it is lawfull to me
Thys verbe maye be tourned. xxxvi. wayes, accor-
dyng to the fyrst conjugation.

^{It is to me lawfull, it is to the it is to him} Il me loise, ^{It is to vs} il te loise, ^{it is to you, it is to them lawfull.} il luy loyse. Il nous,
il vous, ilz leurs loise. **P̄terit imparfet.**

^{It is to me lawfull, to the, to him lawfull, to vs} Il me loissoit, ^{to you} il te, ^{to them lawfull, or licite.} il luy loissoit, Il nous, il vo^s,
ilz leur loissoit. **P̄terit p̄fet.**

^{I was} Il me loissist, ^{to the} il te, ^{to him} il luy, ^{to vs} loissist. Il nous il vous
ilz leur loissist. **The infinitif.**

^{It hath ben to me lawfull, to the to him to vs} Il ma este loisible, ^{to you} il ta este, ^{to them lawfull, or behouable,} il luy a, Il nous a,
il vous a, ilz leur a este loisible.

The

¶ The plusparfet.

It had ben to me, or els it had behoued me.

¶ Il mauoit este loissible, il tauoit este loysyble
il luy auoyt este loysible, Il nous il vous, ilz leur
auoit este loissible.

It shalbe to me it shalbe to me

¶ The future is Il me loysera, Or elles il me sera
loysyble.

¶ The future of the Imperatif, whych is negatife
Like that it be nat laifull to the.
is, Garde ou faitz, quil ne te loise.

That it were to me laifull.

¶ The parfet, Quil me fust loissible. **¶** The p^{re}terit
imparfet. Quil me laississe.

That it haue ben to me that he had ben to him

¶ The parfet. Quil mate este, quil luy apt este
loissible, and so forth.

That it had ben to me laifull

¶ The plusparfet. Quil meust este loysible.

¶ The subiunctif is lyke the optatife, takynge the
p^{re}sent for the seconde future.

How it shulde be laifull to me

¶ The f^yst future. Come il me loyseroit, come il
te loyseroit, come il luy loyseroit. Come ilz nous
loyseroit, cōe ilz vo⁹ loyseroit, come ilz leur loyseroit

¶ Finis.

A Coniugation of thys verbe Care, whych for
the most parte is negatyue, as, J care nat,
And if ye wyl add this worde it, vnto the same,
sayeng, J care nat for it, ye shal put an n, after eue

Q.iii.

ry

cy pnown, as **Il ne me chault, il ne ten, il ne luy en**
Il ne nous en, il ne vous en, il ne leur en chault.

^{I care nat,} ^{thou carest nat,} ^{he} ^{we}
Il ne me chault, il ne te chault, il ne luy . Il ne
^{ye} ^{they}
nous, il ne vous, ilz ne leur chault.

Pzeterit parfet.

^{I dyd nat care,}
Il ne me, il ne te, il ne luy chaloit . Ilz ne nous,
^{ye} ^{they}
ilz ne vous, ilz ne leur chaloit.

Pzeterit perfet.

^{I cared nat,}
Il ne me, il ne te, il ne luy chalut . Ilz ne nous
^{ye} ^{they}
ilz ne vous, ilz ne leur chalut.

^{I have nat cared}
The pzeterit indiffinityf. Il ne ma chalu &c.

Pzeterit plusparfet.

^{I had nat cared.}
Il ne mauoit, il tauoit, il ne luy auoyt. Ilz
^{ye} ^{they}
ue nous, ilz ne vous, ilz ne leur auoit chalu.

The future.

^{I shall nat care,}
Il ne me chauldra, il ne te, il ne luy . Ilz ne nous
^{ye} ^{they}
ilz ne vous, ilz ne leur chauldra. Imperatif.

^{Care thou nat, him} ^{Care we nat, care ye,} ^{care they}
Ne te, ne luy chaille, Ne nous, ne vous, ne leur
^{nat}
chaille.

Both futures.

^{Se} ^{That thou care} ^{that thou nat care.} ^{Se we}
Garde Quil te chaille, ql ne te chaille, Gardos
^{that} ^{we care,} ^{that we nat care.} ^{Se ye} ^{that}
quil nous chaille, ql ne nous chaille. Gardes quil
^{ye care,} ^{that ye nat care.} ^{let them} ^{Se} ^{that they}
vous chaille, quil ne vous chaille. Gardet ql leur
chaille

care, that they nat care.

chaille, quil ne leur chaille.

Optatif.

with my wyl. That I care, that ye care,

A ma boullente. Quil me chaille, ql te chaille,

that he care That we care, that ye care.

quil luy chaille. Quil nous chaille, ql vo^r chaille.

that they care,

quil leur chaille.

The imparfet.

wold to god, That I care that thou

Pleust o dieu. Quil me chalusse, ql te chalusse,

that him, that we that ye

quil luy chalusse, Quil nous chalusse, quil vous

that they care.

chalusse, quil leur chalusse.

Preterit pset.

with my wyl. That I haue, that thou hast

A ma boullente. Quil me chalust, ql te chalust,

that he hath care, That we that ye that they haue care.

ql luy ayt chalu. quil no^r ql vo^r ql leur ayt chalu

The preterit plusparfet.

O if I had care, if thou hadest, if he had, care

if

Sil me eust, sil teust, sil luy eust chalu. **Sil**

we, if ye if they had care,

nous, sil vous, sil leur eust chalu.

I pray to god.

The future is like the pset as. Je ppe a dieu

that I care nat, or that I care.

quil ne me chaille, ou qui me chaille.

The subiunctiue is lyke the optatyf.

whan I shall care.

The future. Mais quil me chaille, & so forth.

I shall nat care, thou

The seconde future. Il ne me chauldroit, il ne

shuld nat care, he shuld nat care,

te chauldroit, il ne luy chauldroit.

It maketh no mater, or it shylleth nat.

The indifinitue. Il ne peult chaloit.

Note that if ye leue this woide, **Pe**, whiche is befoze every p^{ro}nowne, it is affirmatiue, and if ye do put it vnto the sayd p^{ro}nowne it is negatiue.

Ano^r

A Nother conjugaciō of two verbes together
that is to say, *I* cerche in englyshe, and be-
cause *I* wyl eichewe p^{ro}lixite, *I* wyl touche but
the synguler nombze of euery cense.

I seke, all one thou
E ie cerche, ie quiers, tu cherche, tu quiers,
he *we* cerche
il cerche, il quiers. Nous cerchons, nous quions,
ye *they*,
vous cerches, vous quiers, ils cherchent, ils quierent

Preterit imparfet.

I had seke or cerche

E ie cerchoie, ou queroye.

I sought.

The preterit parfet. *I* ie cerchay, ou quis.

I haue sought.

The preterit indifinitif. *I* ay cerche, ou quis.

I had sought.

The preterit plusparfet. *I* auoie cerche, ou quis

I shall cerche.

The future. *I* ie cercheray, ou quereray.

Seke thou or *seke* *he*

The imperatif. Cerche toy, ou quiers toy.

Seke we, *seke* ye,

Querons nous, cerchons nous, queres vous, cer-
seke *they*,
ches, quierent eulz, cherchent eulz.

Se that thou *seke*, that thou *cerche*,

The future. Garde que tu cerche, que tu quiere

seke that thou *cerche* not

The secōd futur. Garde q tu ne cerche ou qere.

wish my will, that *I* *cerche*

The optatif. *A* ma voullentē. Que ie cherche,
or *seke*,
ou quiere.

would to god, that *I* *had* *cerche*

Preterit impfet. Pleust a dieu Que ie cerchasse
pleust a dieu que ie quisse.

The

^{with my will, that}
CThe p̄terit p̄f̄et. ^Ima voullent̄. Que iate
^{hane sought.}
cerche, ou quis.

^{Or I had sought.}
CThe p̄terit plusp̄f̄et. ^Ose ieusse cerche, ou q̄s.
^{if thou had if he had.}
Se tu eusse sil eust &c.

CThe subiunctif is like p̄ opta. ^{when} ^Ishall cerche.

CThe fyrst future. ^Imais que ie cerche, ou quiere
^{I shalde cerche.}

CThe seconde future. Je cercheroie, ou q̄reroie.
quererois, roit, rions, riez, roient.

^{To seke, and cerche.}
CThe infinitif. Cercher ou querir.

CNote that this coniugacion may be turned six
and thirty maner wayes after the fyrst sayenge.

^{I seke, seke I, why seke I, I seke}
Je cerche, cerche ie, ^{Do.} quoy cerche ie. Je ne cer-
^{nat, seke nat I, why seke nat I}
che pas, ne cerche ie pas, Pourquoy ne cerche ie
pas. &c.

^{I seke}
Oz elles an hundred and .viij. wayes in
one, tense, sayenge after the .ii. coniugation. Je me
^{me, I seke the, I him cerche.}

quiers, ie te quiers, ie le quiers. and to forth tour-
ninge it with the questions. **C**Loke vpon the se-
cōde coniugation.

CFinis.

A Coniugation of a verbe that must be pro-
nounced wth double ll accordynge to the se-
uenth rule that is immediatly after the prologue,
^{R.} whyche

whiche shalbe a patron & example for all such ver-
bes, the which coniugation may be turned six and
thirty wayes after the fyrst, or an hundred & .viii.

after the seconde. The verbes ben. ^{I knele,} Je mēgenouille

^{I blote,} ^{I wote,} ^{I make foule,} ^{I stert,} ie brouille, ie touille, ie mouille, ie souille, ie rouille, ie

^{I cur,} ^{I gaur,} catouille, ie fatrouille, ie barbouille, ie taille, ie baille

^{I gape,} ^{I raple,} ie basille, ie ralle, and suche lyke.

^I ^{knele,} ^{thou} ^{knele,} ^{he} ^{knele,} Je mēgenouille, tu tēgenouille, il sengenouille,

^{we} ^{knele,} ^{you} ^{knele,} Nous no^r engenouillons, vous vo^r engenouilles,

^{they} ^{knele,} ilz sengenouillent. ¶ The p^reterit imp^ret.

^I ^{dyd} ^{knele,} ^{thou} ^{he} Je mēgenouilloie, tu tēgenouillois, il sēge-

^{we} ^{you} nouilloit. Nous no^r engenouillōs, vous vous en-

^{they} genouillēs, ilz sēgenouillent. ¶ The p^reterit p^ret.

^I ^{dyd} ^{knele,} ^{thou} ^{he} Je mēgenouillay, tu tēgenouillas, il sēge-

^{we} ^{you} nouilla. Nous no^r engenouillames, vous vous en-

^{they} genouillates, ilz sēgenouillerēt. ¶ P. ind^rinfinitif.

^I ^{have} ^{kneled,} ^{thou} ^{hast} ^{kneled,} ^{he} ^{hath} Je may engenouillē tu tas engenouillē, il sa en-

^{we} ^{have} ^{you} genouillē, nous no^r auons engenouille, vous vo^r

^{they} aues engenouille, ilz se ont engenouillē.

¶ The p^reterit plusp^ret.

^I ^{had} ^{kneled} ^{thou} Je mauoie engenouillē, tu te auois engenouillē

il se

^{he} il se auoit égenoullé. ^{we} Nous no⁹ auioz engenoullé
^{you} vo⁹ vo⁹ auies égenoullé, ^{they} ilz se auoiet égenoullés

The future.

^I Je m'engenoullera, ^{thou} tu t'engenoulleras, ^{he} il s'engenoullera. ^{we} Nous no⁹ engenoulleroz, ^{you} vous vo⁹ engenoullerez, ^{they} ilz s'engenoullero^t. **The imparatif.**

^{knele} ^{thou} ^{or} ^{he} ^{knele} ^{we},
Engenoullé toy, ou soy, engenoullons nous,
^{knele} ^{ye}, ^{let} ^{them} ^{knele}.
engenoullés vous, quilz s'engenoullent.

Both futures negatif and affirmatif.

^{De} ^{that} ^{thou} ^{knele}. ^{that} ^{thou}
Garde ^{knele} ^{not} ^{that} ^{he} ^{knele}, ^{that} ^{he} ^{knele} ^{not},
Que tu t'engenoullé, que tu ne t'engenoullé pas,
^{that} ^{we} ^{knele}, ^{that} ^{we}
Que nous no⁹ engenoullôz, que nous ne nous en
^{knele} ^{not} ^{that} ^{ye} ^{do} ^{knele}, ^{that}
genoullons pas, que vous vo⁹ engenoullés que
^{ye} ^{do} ^{not} ^{knele}, ^{Do} ^{that} ^{they}
vous ne vous engenoullés pas. faictes quilz s'en
^{knele}, ^{do} ^{that} ^{they} ^{knele} ^{not},
genoullent, faictes quilz ne s'engenoullent pas.

^{with} ^{my} ^{wpli.} ^{or} ^I ^{pray}
The optatif. ^{you} ^{that} ^I ^{may} ^{knele}, ^{that} ^{thou} ^{he}
A la miene boullété. Du se vous prie,
^{or} ^{me} ^{that} ^{we}
Que se mégenoullé que tu t'engenoullé, quil
^{you} ^{they}
ou quelle s'engenoullé, que nous no⁹ engenoullôz
que vous vous engenoullés, quilz ou quelles s'en
genoullent.

The preterit imparfet.

^{wold} ^{to} ^{god} ^{that} ^I ^{had} ^{knele}, ^{that}
Pleust a dieu **Que m'engenoullasse, que tu t'en**
genoull-

R.ii.

genoullasse, quil ou q̃lle sengenoullast. ^{that we} Que nous
nous engenollissions, ^{that} que vous vous engenoul-
lissiez, ^{that they} quilz ou quelles sengenollissent.

C The p̃terit parfet. ^{with my word} A ma voullentē.

C ^{that I have kneled.} Que maye engenoullē q̃ taye engenoullē, ^{that thou} que
^{he} laie engenoullē, ^{that we} que no^r aions engenoullēs, ^{that} que
^{pe} bo^r aies engenoullēs, ^{that they} quilz se aient engenoullēs

C The p̃terit plusparfet.

C ^{I and I had kneled} Se ie meusse engenoullē, ^{if thou hadest} se tu te eusse enges-
^{if he had} noullē, ^{if} se il se eust engenoullē, ^{if we} Se nous nous eus-
^{if you} sions engenoullēs, ^{if they} se vous vous eusses engenoul-
lēs, silz se eussent engenoullēs.

C The subiunctif is lyke the optatif, sayenge. Cōe
o^r Quant befoze the verbe.

C The f̃y^r future.

C ^{whan I shall knele} Mais que ie mengenoullē, ^{thou} que tu tengenoullē,
^{he} quil sengenoullē. ^{whan we} Mais que nous nous engenoul-
^{whan} lōs, ^{pe} que vo^r vous engenoullēs, ^{whan they} quilz sēgenoullēt

C The seconde future,

C ^{I would knele} Je mengenoulleroie, ^{thou} tu tengenoullerois ^{he} il sen-
^{we} genoulleroit, ^{pe} Nous nous engenoulleriens, ^{they} vous
vous engenoulleriez, ilz sengenoulleroient.

The

^{to} ^{huele} ^{to haue}
The infinitif. Engenouller. The pterit. Auoit
^{kneled} ^{for to knele}
engenoullę. The Gerundif. Pour mengenuouller,
^{in kneeling.}
De mengenuouller, En mengenuoullant.

^{I wylche the'}
The querthowen, oꝝ supin. Je te souhaite en-
^{kneled}
genolle. And lyke wyse of all the other verbes a
boue, reuersed. Finis.

A Contugation combinynge oꝝ iopnyng two
 verbes togider, that is to say, I am, & I do,
 takynge the pꝛesent onely, in eschewyng pꝛolixite.

^{whan I am at scole, I do my deuer}
Quant ie suis a lescole, ie fais mon debuoir da
^{to lerne my lesson.}
pꝛendre ma lesson, ou lecon.

^{whan thou art at scole, thou doest thy deuer to lerne}
Quāt tu es a lescole, tu fais ton debuoir dapꝛē
^{me thy lesson.}
dꝛe ta lesson ou lecon.

^{whan he is at scole, he doeth his deuer to lerne}
Quant il est a lescole, il fait son debuoir dapꝛē
^{his lesson}
dꝛe sa lesson.

^{whan we be at scole, we do our}
Quant noꝝ sōmes a lescole, nous faisons nostre
^{deuer to lerne}
debuoir dappꝛendꝛe nostre lecon.

^{whan ye be at scole, ye do your}
Quant vous estes a lescole, vous faites vostre
^{deuer to lerne your}
deuoir dappꝛendꝛe vostre lesson.

^{whan they be at scole, they do they deuer to}
Quant ilz sont a lescole, ilz font leur deuoir da
^{lerne they,}
pꝛendꝛe leur lecon.

And so forth thow al the cōiugation of I am, a
boue witten, and of this verbe I do, whiche is in
The p̄terit imparfet. Je faisoie.

parfet.

I dyd.

Je fets.

I haue done.

The p̄terit indifinitif.

Jay fait.

I had done.

plusparfet.

Jauroie fait.

I shall do.

Do thou.

The future Je feray.

The imparatif. fais

Take that thou do.

The future Garde que tu face.

Let me do.

The optatif. que ie face

imparfet.

That I dyd.

Que ie feisse.

That I haue done.

The p̄terit. parfet.

que iaye fait.

That I had done.

pluspfet.

que ieusse fait:

The subiunctif. lyke the optatif.

whan I shall do.

The f̄yst future. Mais que ie face. The secōd.

I wuld do.

Je feray, rois. roit. ferlois. ries. roient. The in-

To do,

To haue done,

finitif. faire. P̄terit. Auoir fait Gerundif.

In doyng, to do, for to do. The ouerthrowen, to be done

En faisāt. a faire. po^r faire. Le rēuerse. Estre fait.

Note, that for to lerne frēche quickly, ye muste
turne the sayd coniugation. iiii. maner of wayes,
that is to say Affyrmatieue, and interrogatiue, and
negatyue and interrogatiue, as it hath ben plainli
shwed here befoze.

fins.

Another cōiugation by way of cōbination like
the tother befoze reherled, And f̄yst of the p̄sent.

quant

^{whan I repute me vile & vncleue} ^{by humilite}
Quāt se me repute vil & ord, vile & orde, p hūilite.
^{I am cleue and pure,} ^{by goodnes.}

Je suis nect & pur, necte & pure, par bonte.
^{whan thou repute the,} ^{by goodnes}
quant tu se repute vil & ord, vile & orde, par bonte.
^{thou art}

Tu es nect et pur, necte & pure par humilite.
^{whan he him repute,}
quant il se repute vil et ord, vile & orde par bonte.
^{he is}

Il est pur et nect, pure necte par humilite.
^{whan we vs repute,}
quāt nous no^r reputons vilz et ordz, viles & ordz
^{we be}

par humilite. nous sōmes purs et nectz &c. p bonte.
^{whan ye you repute,}
quāt vous vo^r reputes vilz & ordz, viles & ordes,
^{ye be}

par humilite. vous estes purs & nectz. &c. par bōte
^{whan they them repute,}
quāt ilz ou elles se reputēt vilz & ordz, viles & ordes
^{by mekenes,} ^{they}

par humilite. Ilz ou elles, sont purs & nectz, purs
^{be mekenesse}
& nectes par bonte. And so forth vnto the impera-
tif, makyng other verbes by patron of the same.

Also another cōiugation w^t two verbes toge-
der euery of them twayne reherſed, & the verbe
repeted euer in te p^reterit parſet, and the fyrſt and
laſt goyng througħ all the modes and tences, the
whiche ben thus. whan I ſe that I neuer ſawe, I
thynke that I neuer thought.

^{whan I ſe that, whiche I neuer ſawe, I thinke}
Quant te voy ce que ne veis iamais, Je penſe
^{that I neuer thought,}
ce que ne penſay oncques.

quant

^{whan thou seest that, that thou}
Quant tu vois ce que tu ne vois jamais, tu pense
ce que ie ne pensas oncques.

^{whan he seeth he thinke that}
Quant il voit ce quil ne veist iamays, Il pence ce
quil ne pensa oncques.

^{whan we se that, that we}
Quant nous voions ce q nous ne besmes iamais
nous pensons ce que ne pensames oncques.

^{whan ye se that, that ye neuer sawe}
Quant vous voyes ce que ne veistes iamais, vo^s
penses ce que ne pensastes oncques.

^{whan they se they}
Quan ilz voient ce quilz ne voient iamais, ilz pe
sent ce que ne penserent oncques. And so throughe
till the imperatif, than ye may turne the vbes if ye
lyst, sayenge, whan I thynke that I neuer thought
I se that I neuer saw. Quant ie pense ce q ne pen
sai iamais, Je voy ce q ne vois oncques, & so forth

Another conjugation ioiynge two verbes together.

^{whan I am ydell, I worke nat, whan I}
Quant ie chōme, Je ne besoigne pas, quant ie
^{worke. I am nat ydell. whan thou art ydell thou}
besongne, ie ne chomme pas. quant tu chomme tu
^{workest nat, whan thou workest, thou art nat}
ne besongne pas. quant tu besongne, tu ne chōme
^{ydell. whan he or she is ydell, he or she workech}
pas, quant il ou elle chōme, il ou elle ne besongne
^{nat. whan he or she doeth worke, he or she is nat ydell.}
pas, quant il ou elle besōgne, il ou elle ne chōme p
quant

^{whan we be ydel, we do nat worke}
Quant nous chōmons nous ne besongnons pas.
^{whan we worke, we be nat ydel,}
Quant nous besongnons, nous ne chōmons pas.
^{whan ye be ydel, ye worke nat}
Quant vous chōmmez, vous ne besongnez pas.
^{whan ye worke, ye be nat ydel.}
Quant vous besongnez, vous ne chōmmez pas.
^{whan they ben ydel, they worke}
Quant ilz, ou elles chōment, ilz, ou elles ne be-
^{nat, whan they worke, they}
songnent pas. Quant ilz, ou elles besongnent, ilz
^{be nat ydel}
ou elles ne chōment pas. And so forth til the im-
^{I was ydel.}
peratif, saîeg in the p̄terit imparfet. Chōmme
^{I dyd worke.}
Besongnote. &c. In the parfet. Chōmmez. Beson-
^{whan I haue ben ydel, I haue}
gnay. The indifinitif. Quāt Jay chōmmez. Je nay
^{nat worked, whan I had ben ydel}
pas besōgne. The plusparfet. Quāt iauoie chōm-
^{I had nat worked whan}
mez, ie nauoie pas besongne. The future. Quant
^{I shalbe ydel, I shal nat worke}
te chōmmeray, ie ne besongneray pas.

**Another coniugation accorpyng
 to the p̄cedent.**

^{whan I am possessed, I haue good eames}
Quāt ie suis nantis ou nantie, iay bōnes arres
^{whan I haue none eames, I am nat possessed.}
Quāt ie nay nulles arres, ie ne suis point nantie.
^{whan thou art possessed, thou hast good eames, whan}
Quant tu es nantis tu as bonnes arres. Quāt
^{thou hast none eames. thou art nat possessed}
tu nas nulles arres, tu nes point nantis.
^{whan he hath good eames, he is whan he}
Quant il a bonnes arres, il est nantis. Quāt il
S. nest

^{is nat possessed, he hath none earne.} ^{whan we}
 neit point nantis, il na nulles arres. Quant nous
^{be possessed, we} ^{hane good earne:} ^{whan}
 sommes nantis, nous auōs bonnes arres. Quant
^{we hane good earne,} ^{we be possessed,}
 nous auons bonnes arres, nous sommes nantis,
^{whan ye be} ^{ye hane good}
 Quāt vous estes nantis, vous aues bonnes arres
^{whan ye hane} ^{ye be}
 Quāt vous aues bonnes arres, vo^r estes nantis.
^{whan they be} ^{they be} ^{whan}
 Quāt ilz sont nantis, ilz ont bonnes arres, Quant
^{they hane} ^{they be}
 ilz ont bonnes arres, ilz sont nantis. And so forth
^{Je suis}
 after the verbe. I am, sayeng in the p^reterit impar
^{whan I was.}
 fet. Quant i estois. &c. loke aboue.

^{I vnderstāde.} ^{thou vnderstāde,} ^{he}
Entens, ie mentens, tu entens, tu tentens, il
^{or she vnderstandeth, we vs vnderstāde} ^{ye vnder}
 ou elles sentend. nous nous entendons, vous vo^r
^{stāde you, they} ^{vnderstāde,}
 entendes, ilz ou elles sentendent.

The interrogatiue.

^{Vnderstāde I me, vnderstāde thou, vnderstāde he or she,}
Entens ie, tentens tu, sentende il, ou elle,
^{vnderstāde we vs,} ^{vnderstāde ye you,} ^{vn-}
 Nous entendons nous, vous entendes vous, sen-
^{derstāde they them.}
 tendent ilz ou elles.

The negatiue.

^{I vnderstāde nat me,} ^{thou vnderstāde nat the, he, or she}
E ne mentens pas, tu ne tentens pas, il ou el-
^{vnderstāde nat him, we do nat vnderstāde vs.}
 le ne sentend pas. Nous ne nous entendons pas,
^{ye do nat vnderstāde you, they do nat vnderstāde them}
 vo^r ne vo^r entēdes pas, ilz ou elles ne sētēdēt pas.

The

The interrogatiue.

Do nat I vnderstande me, do nat thou vnderstande the, do nat
Ne mentens ie pas, ne tentes tu pas, ne sen-
be vnderstande him, or the, do we nat vnderstande vs,
tend il, ou elles pas. Ne nous entédons nous pas,
do ye nat vnderstande ye, do nat they vnder
ne vous entendes vous pas, ne sentendent ilz, ou
stande them.
elles pas.

Do I vnderstāde, vnderstāde I, I haue vnderstāde, I had
Entendoie. Entendis . J'ay entendu. J'auoie
vnderstāde, I shall vnderstande.
entendu. Entenderay.

Thus endeth the fyrst booke.

An answer to the correcters And of
Apologie aux correcteurs Et de
all woꝝkes reprouers.
touttes ouures repreneurs.

Groſe folke of rude affection
Grosſes gens de rudes affections
Monkerds, banysed of trewe ſelyng
Jurognes bannis de vray ſentement
Lubbers, knaues, pynate of vnderſtandynge
Lourdauz, cocardz, pꝛiues dentendement
In theire mouthfull takynge reſection
En leurgeuillce pꝛenant reſections
faulſſed of opprobꝛe and of detraction
Haoule dopꝛobes et de detractions

Hall say of me as they do of other folkes
Diront de moy come ilz font daultre gent

Behold here, what a maker saye & getyll

Uoies icy, quel facteur bel et gent

Crewe it is for certayne, that I am ignorant

Uray est pour certain, que suis ignorant

Wylling I sought nat to leane therfore

Uouloir ie ne doy pas laisser pour tant

To vndertake thyng that ought to prayse

Emprendre chose, qui fait a priser

Without takyng hede to their dispryse

Sans garde prendre a leur despriser

Some shall say this is yuell wytte

Aulcun diront cecy est mal escript

The othres afterwarde, bendyng the browes

Les aultres apprez, bendant les sourcilz

Shall there synde right great faute of spirite

Itrouueront tresgrant faulte despriz

Other shall wey all, as folkes subtilles

Aultres peseront tout, come gens subtilz

Upon this gyping their sentence and aduise

Sur ce donnant leur sentence et aduis

Say euery one what so euer he wyll

Die vng chescun ce que dire bouldra

In thispite of the dyuell, and of yuel wyll

En despit du diable, et de mal boullotr

Se they may, that I haue put me in deuet

Ueoit ilz pouront, que ma mis en debuoir

To do well, do better that can

A bien faire, face mieulz qui scara

Of me certes, nat reproued he shalbe

De moy certes, ia repzins nen sera

Jesus than vs graunt well to do

Ihesus doncques, nous ottroy bien faire

Without wylling, neither him nor other displease

Sans boullotr, na luy na aultre desplaire.

Ende of the fyrst boke.



There foloweth the secon-
de booke of thys lytell
worke, in the whych shalbe trea-
ted of cōmunications, & other
thynges necessary to the ler-
nyng of the sayde fren-
che tonge, Newly
corrected and
amended.

..

(. .)

(, ,)

(. .)

(, ,)



CA laude and prayse to the Kynges
noble grace/and the maner of
wytynge of the style of
hys Imperiall
crowne.



To the ryght hys, ryght chysten, and
La treshaulte, trescrestien, et
moste redouted imperiall myghte
trestredoutce imperiale pui-
and souerayne maiesste of
sance, & soueraine maiesste de
you, Henry the viii. by the
hous, Henry. VIII, par la
grace of God, luyngge luyngge vics
grace de dieu, viuant roy vyc
torious, and monarcion of all Englande. France,
torieux, et monarque de toute Engleterre, France
and Irelande, defendours of the fapth, and of the
& Irelande, defendeur de la foy, et de les
churche of Englande and also of Irelande,
glyse Anglicane et aussy de Irelande
on earth the supreme heed, Be laude
sur terre la supzeme, Soit louenge
euerlastyng, honour wythout ende:
perpetuelle, honneur sans fin,
Alwayes lastynge lre pio:
Toussours durant vie pio:
sperous and good felcrite,
spere bien heurce,
Amen. Amen.
Amen. Amen.

¶ Et dicat omnis populus Amen.



wolde to go

Ma boullente

That the godhead,

Que la destē

ful of goodnesse

Plaine de bōtē

Had graunted to me

Sy meust attroie

whiche am cōterfait

Qui suis contrefait

Of ignorācy, and vndone

Dignozance et desfait

hōnyng and knowlege

Science & scauoit

with the power

Muecques pouoit

Can declare

Scauoit declarer

And to manifeste

Et manifester

After my power

Selon mon possible

The grace that can nat be calde

La grace indicible

Of the right chysten hōnyng

Du trescrestien roy

whiche in noble aray

Qui en noble aray

Is this day lōnyng

Est auourdhy bīuant

Prosperous and reīgnūge

Prosperous, et regnant

whiche all the men

Quitous les hommes

How great that we ben

Come grans que sommes

As well clerkes and lays

Et clerz & lais

By his faire qēdes

Par ses beaulz faitz

hath overcome

A surmontes

And excelled

Et excelles

wherof, the most

Pourquoy le plus

Parfait here beneth

Parfait ca ius.

Having power

Ayant pouoir

And the hōnyng

Et le scauoit

Shuld sayle right well

I fauldzoit bien

That his maintēnyng

Que son maintien

That his spirit

Que son sprit

Of wyt hōndled

De sens esprit

Might ones begyne

Peult entamer

For to declare

Pour declarer

As it hapened

Come il aduient

whan a man doth come

Quant home vient

To the greates see

A la graunt mer

For to lade is

Pour lespuīser

Incontinently

Incontinent

That he doth se

Quil voit coment

his entrepise

Son entepise

whiche is that him tēchys

Qui se latise

La

Wath'made him do amysse
La fait mesprendre
willinge to take in hande
Vouloir emprenre
A thinge vnpoyssible
Chose impossible
He that righte feble
Luy quy debile
Is, and fraile
Et et fragile
And litell able
Et pou abille
As a man dronke
Comme vng hoine pure
whiche lytell to lyue
Duy guere viure
Naturally
Naturclement
May nat goodly
Ne peult bonnement
He him withdraue
Il se retire
Bluckynge him selfe
Et se detire
Hym complaynyng
Doy doulousant
That not knowynge
Que non scauans
He hath vndertake
Il a empzis
To wyn the pris
Gagner le pris
willinge for to do
Pour vouloir faire
The whiche to parfayme
Ce que parfayre
No man myght
Aul ne pouloit
were he neuer
Tant ne seroit

Qu'an to myght
Home puissant
Alwayes luyng
Touours viuant
Reith er moze noz leste
Ne plus ne moins
To put his handes
Mectre ses mains
Or help hym selfe
Du sempoisier
willinge to prayse
Vouloir priser
Prince without pere
Prince sans per
And nat to erre
Sans point errer
Shulde be to lade
Seroit puisser
The water out of the se
Leue hors la mer
wherfore in now
Pourquoy atant
He withdraue
Ne retirant
Of myne enterpris
De mon enpris
I say without fiction
Dis sans faintise
Durynge my lyfe
Durant ma vye
Be it sadde or mery
Soit triste ou lye
I shall neuer cease
Ne cesseray
Nor shall leue
Ne lasseray
In every place
En chescun lieu
To laude god
De louer dieu

And also to crye
Et de crier
And to supplie
Et supplier
His magestie
Sa mageste
And godhred
Et deite
To be wyllynge to hepe
Vouloir garder
And to p[re]serue
Et p[re]seruer
the noble lord
Le noble seigneur
From all unhap
De tout malheur
Also the lady
Aussy la dame
which lyued without blame
Que vint sans blame
I vnderstande the quene
J'entens la royne
whiche neuer doth ende
Duy point ne fine
To do honour
De faire honneur
To the maker
Au createur
with the
Avec celle
that hath no pere
Qui non pareille
In this worlde
Est en ce monde
Myght pure and clene
Trespure et monde
It is the p[ri]ncesse
Cest la p[ri]ncesse
Half a goddesse
Demie deesse

Reaunge them to be
Les nous laissant
Here luyng
Jcy viuant
Wight longe space
Tresslongue espace
with his grace
Avec la grace
than whan shall come
Duis quant viendra
that it shall ned
Quil couviendra
At the latter ende
A la parfin
that they take an ende
Outlz p[re]ngnent fin
without byternesse
Sans amertune
O payne any
Ne paine aulcune
they be sette
Ils soient poses
And bestowed
Et colocques
In heuen
En parades
wher as euer
La outoudis
they may laude
Dussent louer
And exalte
Et exalter
with the sayntes
Avec les saintes
wherof there is many
Dont y a maintz
The blessed trinite
La benoiste trinite
The persones in vnite
Trois p[er]sonnes en vnite

La

the whiche for euer without decayne
La quelle a iamaïs sans declin
Reygne alwayes without ende
Reygne a tousiours sans prendre fin :

Finis.

CA messager comminge from the kin-
ges grace, to his Welbeloued
Doughter lady Mary:

Mary. ^{from whens come you my frende} Dou venes vous mon amy. ^{I come from the} The
messanger. ^{courte.} Certes madame ie viens de la
^{How doth fare the kynge my father, and} court. ^{the good lady my mother.} Ma. Comment se porte le roy mon pere, et
la bone dame ma mere. ^{In trauthe} The messanger. En verite
^{madame they dyd ryghte well at my partyng} madame ilz se portoient tresbien a mon depart i met,
^{or when I came thens.} ou quant ie m'en partis. ^{I am ryght gladde} Ma. Je suis tresiotense
^{of they good prosperite, and pray our lord} de leur bonne prosperite, et prie nre seigneur tous-
^{wayes so to maynteyne them: Do not you byng me so} iours ainsi les maintenir. ^I Ne maportez vous ql
^{me remembrance or token from them} que souuenance on siegne de par eulz. ^I Le mes. Je
^{do presente vnto you in the name of the good grace of the kynge} vous presente ou nom de la bone grace du roy vo-
^{pour father, this hert of golde, a melde of trewe hope, whiche} stre pere, ce ceur doz, esmaille de bryay esperance, q
^{is russet couler, and from the good lady pour} est coulleur grise, et de par la bonne dame vostre
^{mother, a flour of forget me not with the bles-} mere vne fleur de ne moubliez mpe, avecq la bene-
^{spunge of god giuen to Jacob.} diction de dieu donnee a Jacob.

C.ii.

Ma

what blessing do ye speake to me of,
Ma. Quelle benediction me inectes vo^r in termes
 The same that Abraham gaue to Isaac, & Isaac
 Le mess. Celle q^e Abraham dona a Isaac, & Isaac
 to Jacob, and Jacob to Judas, the whiche is such that
 a Jacob, et Jacob, a Judas, La quelle est telle, q^e
 all they that shall blesse you, shall be blessed
 tousceulx qui vous benyront seront benyes. **Ma.**
 Blessed be god, and blessed be the kynge and the Quene
 Benoit soit dieu, & benoitz soit le Roy, & la Roine
 and all creatures of good wylle. Now tell
 et toutes creatures de bonne boullète: Or sus die
 me what newes bringe ye to me.
 moy, quelles nouvelles maportez vous: Le mes.
 Truly madame, I do knowe none other thyng that
 Veritablement madame, te ne scay aultre chose q^e
 I may say openly, but that the kyng is a knyght.
 puisse dire en appert sinon que le roy est cheuallier
 Forsoth, or in my god: there be saye tidynge, ye
Ma. En mon dieu, velle belles nouvelles, vous
 may go whan shall please you,
 vous poues enaller quant vous playra. Le mes.
 wherefore madame. Because that ye haue done
 Pourquoi madame. **Ma.** Pource que fait aues
 pour arande.
 vostre message.

I praye you how do myne d^r
C Je vous prie cōment se porte, si portēt, mon on-
 le fait, le font.
 cle, myne ante, my lord my lady
 cle, ma tante, monsieur, ma dame, maistre, ma-
 my my
 stresse, mon cousin, mes cousins, ma cousine, mes
 neighbour,
 cousines, mon voisin, mes voisins, ma voisine,
 my god father, my god mother gosp
 mes voisines, mon parin ma marine, mon cōpere
 ma cominere, maistre, maistresse, les damoiselles,
 les

women, the men and all
les gentilz femmes, les gentilz hommes: Et tous
my good frendes.
mes bons amis.

He or she. they
Cil, ou elle, se recōmande, ilz, ou elles, se reco-
an hundred, times, a thousand times, to pour good grace
mandēt cent fois, mille fois, a vostre bonne grace
to pour hyghness, to pour excellency, to pour lordshyppe
a vostre haultesse, a vŕe excellence a vŕe seigneurie.

I am glad that he do well
Je suis ioteus, ie suis ioieuse, quil se porte bien
that she that they do
quelle le fait biē, qlz le font biē qlles se portē bien

whan Mallye retourne whan pzetende pou
Quant retourneres vous, quant pzetēdes voŕ
or purpose pou to returne toward the court
quant pproposēs vous de retourner deuers la court
toward the kyng, the quene, my lord,
deuers le roy, deuers la royne, deuers monsieur,
my lady, &c.
deuers madame. &c.

Certainely to morowe, after to morowe
Certainemēt madame demain, appres demain
within this two dayes, within. viii. dayes, within this moneth
dieu a. ii. iours, dieu a huit iours, dieu ung mois:
wyl it please you to comāde me any serapce.
Vous plaist il me commander aucun seruite,

I you pray to do my most humble recomme-
Je vous prie de faire mes treshūbles recoman-
dations to the good grace of the kyng, my father, and the
dations a la bonne grace du Roy mon pere, et a la
good lady: my mother, and to saye to the that I the praye al-
bonne dame ma mere, et leur dire q ie les prie tous
wayes of their blessinges.
iours de leurs benediction.

C.iii. Mon

Constitio to the lady Mary, by the lady of Mal
trauers, humble seruant to her noble grace,
vpon a prouerbe whiche is, heryng
say, goth by the towne.



Madame ie vo^r ap ouy dire
That by the towne goth here say
Que par ville a ouy dire
wherfore I you say, and for treuth
Pourquoy ie vo^r dis, et pour vray
That yf ye ne do other deue
Que sy ne faictes aultre debuoir
ye shall fynde that one hath mistayde
Vous trouueres quon a mesdict
In that whiche of you one hath sayde
En ce que de vous on a dit
That you dyd speake ryght good frenche
Que vous parlies trelbon francois
Passed all redy moze than six monthes
Passes desia plus de six mois
wherfore for the loue that I you owe
Pourquoy pour l'amour que vo^r doi
And that to you haue gyue my sayth
Et que vous ay donne ma foy
I you requyre and monishe
Je vous requier et admoneste
Of the whiche is redy
Come celle que est prestre
To serue you and woysyppe
De vous seruit et honozer
That it please you to remembre
Quil vous plaise rememozer
That which moze touch pour honour
Ce qui plus touche vostre honeur
For yf it dyd please oure lord
Car sil plaisoit nostre seigneur
That you myghte ones comme to
Que vous prussies ia paruenir

Du

where your harts hath his desyre
Ou vostre coeur a son desir
without knowynge the frenche speche
Sans sauoit parler francois
ye shulde be forced to take by election
Il vous faudroit prendre par chos
I saye lady and mynion
Une belle dame mignonne
for to assiste pour personne
Pour assister vostre personne
And also for to interprete
Et ausy pour enterpreter
That whiche it shulde please you to declare
Ce quil vous plairoit declarer
To your housbande and lord
A vostre mary et seigneur
were he cyther kynge or emperour
Fust il ou roy ou empereur
whiche myght be occasion
Quy pourroit estre occasion
To gree you suspicion
De vous donner suspicion
Puttyng you in talousie
Vous mettant en talousie
wherefore how be it that I am not
Pourquoy combien que ne soie mpe
wylle ynough nor discrete
Alles sage ne discrete
for of you to be secreete
Pour de vous estre secreete
faythfulnesse neuerthelesse bynde me
Loiaulté neantmoïs me lie
The which humbly supplie
Le quel humblement supplie
To your hygh excellency
A vostre haute excellence
To do deuer and diligence
De faire deuoir et diligence
To lerne of all your power
Daprendre de tout vostre pouoir

Alles

To the ende that ye may can
Afin que vous puissés scauoir
 At the comynge of your father
A la venue de vostre pere
 Speake frenche in such wyse
Parler francois de telle maniere
 That Iesu be therof wylshyppid
Que Iesu en soit honore
 And the noble kynge contented
Et le noble roy contenté
 And that it tourne you to honour
Et quil vous tourne a honneur
 And in profyt to the seruant
Et a profit au seruiteur
 whiche say to serue pour grace
Qui pour seruir vostre grace
 Nothynge is possible that he ne do
Nest rien possible quil ne face
 The whiche god be wyllynge to kepe
La quelle dieu veulle garder
 And in such wyse to elumyne
Et tellement eluminer
 That you may haue at the latter ende
Que vous puissés auoir en fin
 The ioye that laste without ende
La iole que dure sans fin.

Amen.

¶ A Messanger comynge from thempetour, the
 frenche kynge, or any other prynce.

God save you good
¶ He mes. Dieu vous sauue madame, bone
 lyfe and honour give you god.
¶ Vie et honneur vous doint dieu madame
 ye be welcome my frende.
¶ Ma. Bien soiez venu mon amy, mame monsieur
 The emperour your cousin recomende
¶ The mes. L'empereur vostre cousin se recommande
 a vous

to your good grace, to your
 a vostre bonne grace, a vostre celsitude, ou maieste
 The hyage my maistre or your father greet you well
 Accoy mon maistre ou vostre pere vous salue.
 Now both his good grace, his to the
 Ma. Comment le faict la bonne grace, la seigneurie.
 he both as the prince
 Le mes Certes madame il se porte come le prince
 of this world, that most desire your welth, your honore
 Dece mode, qui plus desyre vostre bien, vtre honneur
 And for the maintenyng of the which, he wolde be
 Et pour le maintenement du quel, il voudroit em-
 ployer corps & auoir, ou cheuance. Ma. Certes ie
 thank him heretofore for I do holde him for such,
 le merceye de tresbon cœur; car ie le tiens pour tel,
 and I do certifye you that of my parte I wolde do
 et vo^r certifie, que de ma parte ie voudroy faire
 lyke wyse for him. Now ryse up,
 le pareil, le semblable pour lui: Or sus leues vo^r
 I shall beholde your letters than I shall give you
 Je regarderay vo^r lettres, puis ie vous donneray
 an answer At your good pleasure
 responce. Le mes. A vostre bon plaisir madame.
 will it please to your grace pour hyghnesse to con-
 Plaist il a vostre grace, a vostre haultesse, me co-
 maundeme any scrupce, to the of your cousin
 mander aucun service a la maieste de vostre cousin
 the Emperour, or to the kyng my maister, I pray
 lempereur, ou du roy mon maistre. Ma. Je vo^r
 you to recomende me to his maiesty, as we that
 prie de me recomander a sa maieste, come celle qui
 is glad of his welthe, honour, and prosperite
 seroit ioteuse de son bien, honneur, & prosperite.
 And for the which, or to encrease I wolde
 Et pour laquelle, ou leql accroistre ie voudroie
 do my power. I shall fulfill your com-
 faire mon pouoir. Le mes. J'accomplyray vostre co-
 maundement with the helpe of god madame. I praye
 mandement a l'aide de dieu madame. Ma. Je vo^r
 A. en

you therof my frends. And fare wel.
en prie mon amy, Et a dieu soiez ac.

CA pze sent de to the lady Mary.



^{God saue you or pze}
Le messager. Dieu vous garde ou pze-
^{serue you from evil and my Map}
^{serue de mal & dencembziet} madame.
^{re be right well come}
Mary. Vous soiez le tresbien venu
^{my gentilman.}
^{My lord of worcestre}
mon gentilhomme. Le mes. Monsieur de worcestre
^{and my lady his wyfe, recomende them humbly mekepe to}
et madame la femme se recomandent humblement a
^{your good grace, and doth sende you this lytell present,}
vostre bonne grace, & vous enuoient ce petit pzent
^{of such comodities that it hath pleased our lord to}
de telles comodites, q^l a pleu nostre seigneur leur
^{sende them.}
enuoier. **Ma**. En bonne verite ie les mercepe de
^{hertely}
bonne amour. Ce n'est pas le pmiere bonte et cour-
^{tesy that they haue done to me. How doth he I pray you,}
toisie quilz mont faicte. Comment se porte il ie vo⁹
^{and how doth the good lady his wyfe,}
pze, et comment le fait la bonne dame la femme.
^{Certainly madame they do, or they}
Le mes. Certainement madame ilz se portent, ou il
^{fare as they that ben all yours.}
le font cōe ceulz q^l sont tous vostres. **Ma**. En mon
^{I am glad therof, for he is a noble}
dieu ien suis bien toieuse, car il est noble persone
^{lord, man, And he is a good and vertuous lady,}
seigneur homme. Et elle est bonne & vertueuse dame
^{trewe, lady woman,}
honeste, preude, gentille, dame, damoisel, femme,
^{I pray you to thanke her}
de bien, Je vo⁹ prie, ou requies de me la remercier
de me

to thanke them, and to them say, that I Malbe
 de me les regradier, et leur ou luy dictes q̄ ie seray
 glad to remembre the honour that he
 soieuz ioieuse de recognoistre lhonneur quil, ou q̄lle
 they do to me, whan opportunitie or time
 quilz ou quelles me fait ou font quāt tēps oportun
 Malbe I shall endeavour
 ou oportunitie en sera. Le mes. Je menploiray de
 me with all my power to fulfyll your comandement ma
 tout mon pouer a accomplir vostre comādemēt ma
 dame Treasourer, Give hym fifty
 Dame. Ma. Tresorier. Madame. Doncs luy ciquā
 crownes. It Malbe done madame. what please
 te escus, Il sera fait madame: Husbet, que plait il
 your grace. Go and bringe this gentilman to
 a vostre grace, alles et menes ce gentil homme au
 the seller and make him good chere, and loke that he las
 celiex, & luy faictes bōne chiere, et regardes q̄ riēs
 he nothing, I shall fulfyll your pleasure madame.
 ne luy faille. Jacōpliray vostre plaisir madame.

CAn epitaphe made vpon ȳ deth of frenche whi-
 che was fayned for to teche her grace, her
 maistre beyng speke of the gowte.



Here lyeth the frenche ouerthrowen
 Y gist le francois renuerse
 As ye se and cast downe
 Come vous boiez et abatu
 The which is more than a yere agone
 Le quel plus dung an a passe
 That he came amonge vs
 Quauuec nous sest embatu
 wolde to god that he had lyued
 Pleust oze a dieu quil eut vescu
 Reignyng alwayes as he was wont
 Regnant tousiours come il souloit
 Dyth that no man he wolde none euell
 Veu qua nuluy mal ne vouloit

U. il.

Helas

Alas at his begynnyng
Helas, a son commencement
He was so ryght well accepted
Il fust sy tresbien accepte
Of his lady and of her people
De la daine et de la gent
But at the ende dere it hath coste
Mais en la fin chire a couste
For he hath ben slayne
Car il aeste assomme
And cast downe by stronge warre
Et nes ius par forte guerre
And now lyeth deed in the grounde
Et maintenant gist mort en terre

In dyenge made his complaynte
En se mourant fist la complainte
Agaynst thre men of this house
Contre trois hommes de ceans
Wher of one of them hath deceyued many
Dont lung diceulz a diceu maintes
As ben customed all phisiciens
Come seulent tous phisiciens
For I haue harde saye to the auncientes
Car iay ouy dire aux anciens
That with our peryll they lerne
Qua nous perilz font discipline
That whiche may be proued by Pliny
Ce qui ce peult prouer par Plinie

The other which was his enemy
Clautre qui fust son ennemy
Is call'd master amner
Sapelle monsieur laumosnier
Whiche at the fyrste to him was lounge
Qui a premier luy fust amy
Therfor lounge him as a frende dere
Le festoiant come amy chier
But at the ende of a hart of stele
Mais en la fin dung coeuer dacier

Hym renouuancyng put hym in obliuion
Le renouuant mist en obly
wherof he dyed for great thought
Dont il moztust par grant soucy

The thynde that best him dyd mayntene
Le tiers qui mieulz le maintenost
Had it not ben for his absence

Se neuste este pour son absence
one hym dyd name

Jehan apmozgan on le noninoit

The whiche hath hym put in forgettyng

Le quel la mis en non chalance

For how be it that grete knowynge

Car cōbien que grant science

To hym mayntene he had not

A le soubsstent point nauoit

By hym neuerthelesse ouer all he dyd lyne

Par luy neantinois sur tous viuoit

But sith that it is so hapned

Mais puis quainsy est adueny

It muste be take patiently

Prendre le fault pacifiquement

Prayenge for hym and his saluacion

Prant pour luy & son salu

Dens that it maye not be other wyse

Ueu questre ne peult aultrement

That it please to god almyghty

Quil plaise a dieu omnipotent

Of hym and vs to haue mercy

De luy et nous auoit mercy

whan by the deth we shalbe passed

Quant par la mozt serons transp

Amen.

A letter sende to the lady Mary for to lerne
the same, in the absence of her seruante,
whiche dyd teche her grace.

A.iii.

Ama




Complady, my lady Mary of Englarie,
Ma daine, inadame Mary Dégleterre
doughter of the most chaste kyng, my most redoubte
fille du roy trescrestié, ma tresredoubte
ladp and maistrisse, greting with renowne immortall
daine et maistrisse, salut avec renommée immortelle
Conspiderynge that here befoze, I haue
Considerant q̄ deuant oyes, ou par ce deuant vous
aduertyed you. Most illustre and ryghte excellent lady
ay aduerty. Tresillustre et tresexcellente dame, co-
me we haue the deith befoze vs, to the whiche
ment nous auons la mort deuant nous, a laquelle
by the wyl of god we haste vs of all
par le bouilloir diuin nous no^s hastons de toutes
our strengthe to come. The whiche in my memoire reuoluyng
no^s forces puenir. Ce quen ma memoire reuoluât
about my partynge not knowynge yf I shall haue grace to
enuiron mon partemēt ignozant se iaray grace de
retourne in your seruyce or no, I haue aduised
retourner en vostre seruice ou non. Je suis aduise
me of herte trewe and contrite in all mekenes to
se de coeur loyall et contrit en toute humilité vo^s
requyre you forgyuenesse and pardon of the rudenesse that I puell
requeir mercy et pardon de la rudesse que (ie mal
manerd haue vsed towarde you byghnesse, ad-
morigere) ay vsé enuers vostre haultesse vous ad-
ministringe you my poze and unworthy seruyce, suppleryng
ministrant mon poure & indigne seruyce, vous su-
pou humbly that speyally for the loue
pliant humblemēt que speciallement pour lamour
of hym please you to pardone me, for the whiche wyl-
de celuy me beulles pardonet, pour lequel boull-
lynge to serue I haue ryght often passed the marches and
loir seruir iay souuent transgresse les limites et
lymites of reason, haupng confidence assuredly that
bournés de raison, me confiant assurement, que
the synful mekenes of your excellency ioynd
la singuliere benignité de vostre excellēce conioin-
with the fulfyllynge of all other graces, shall not re-
cte avec le comble de toutes aultres graces ne re-
iectera

fectera ne refufera ceste ma petite requēte, et pour
a token of the graunt of the same, that please you benignly
 signe de lotrop dicelle vous plaira benignement
to rede and vnderstande thys rude & vnworthy letters, the whiche
 lire et entendre ceste rude & indigne letters, laquel
(as I hope) shall not do you lytell profit
 le (come l'espoir ne vo^s sera point petit de prouffit
with that that by this meane ye shall restore and excuse
 avec ce q^{ue} par ce moien vous suplerez & excuserez
my^{re} absence, prayeng our lord thus. Most
 mon absence, priant nostre seigneur a tant. Tres-
hys, most illustre, and most excellent lady, to gr-
 haulte, tresillustre, et tresexcellente Dame vous dō
ue you rest pleasaunte, and slepe delicate
 net repos plaisant et sompne delicieuz. Amen.

written by your vnworthy seruant the nyght
Escript p^{our} vostre indigne seruiteur la
that he take leue of your grace
 nuyt que p^{rius} congie de vostre grace.

Another letter sende to the lady Mary
 by Iohn ap morgan squier, caruer
 of the same, her grace beyng
 somewhat crased.


To the right hygh, right excellent, and right magna-
 Treshaulte, tresexcellente, et tresmagna-
nyme My right redouted lady, my ladye
 nime. Ma trestredoubtee dame madame
Mary of Englande my lady, and maistrisse grea-
 Marye Dengleterre, madame et maistrisse, sa-
tyng with toy curlast page. The tribulation of this
 lute avec toy sans fin. Les tribulations de ce
woulde most greuous and most intollerable to
 monde plus angousseuses, & plus intollerable a cō
 porter

here and suffice ryght maistee and prosperous lady
porter et souffrir, trefillustre et bien heurree dame
 ben, when a body despyngs to satysfye and to
sont, quant vne persone desirant de satysfaire & ob-
 obtemperate to his pleasure and affection, is constrained by
temperer a sō plaisir et affection, est cōtrainte par
 strength, and enforced to the contray, wherof I make
viue force et esforcee au contraire, de quoy ie puis
 of my parte, here trewe wytnesse for of the one
de ma part, porter vray tiesinoygnage, car dung
 syd I am holde and bounde after the lawe diuine to en-
coste ie suis tenu et oblige selon la loy diuine de
 certayne my wyfe and espouse not only yf the
tretenir ma femme et espouse, non seulement des
 lytell goodes tempozals that it hath pleased to god to sende me,
petis biens tempozels quil a pleu a dieu m'enquoyer
 but also of my owne body in all her ne-
mais ausy de mon corps mesme en toutes ses ne-
 cessities and businesse, to arde and leze vnto, with that that
goces et affaires, suffulter et assister. Avec ce que
 of the other parte pour excellency, to the whiche I am
daultre part vostre excellence, a la quelle ie suis o-
 bounde by nature and by othe, both syde and
blige par nature, et par serment, me instique et es-
 moue me continually to desyre the of pour ptes
meult incessamment desirer la fruction de vostre pre-
 sence, for the more and more to consyder and beholde the
sence pour de plus en plus ruminer & speculer les
 indyable vertues, of the whiche our lord
incōprehēsibles vertuz, desquelles nostre seigneur
 of his grace infinite hath pou about all
de la grace immense vous a pardessus toutes aul-
 other ladies of this worlde, as the lone about
tres dames de cemonde, come le soleil par dessus
 all the sterres of heuen made to myne and glisse
touttes les estoilles du ceil fait luitre et resplendir
 But sens that none may to the creature satysfye
Mais veu que nul ne peult au creatour satysfayre
 without heppynge the fath promise I haue such hope and trust
ians garder la foy promise say til espoir & confidēce
 en

in your high that this, mekely
 en vostre haulte circonspection, que ce begmine
 considred, that holde me myne absence for
 ment considre, me tiendra en mon absēce pour ex-
 excused: Certifyeng you trewly that it were not
 cuse. Nous certifiant veritablement que se ne fust
 for to praye and require our lady of that
 pour prier et requirre nostre dame de Nathepey qui
 it please her to sende you or give to fare well agayne & helth to reco-
 luy plaise vo^r doner conualescence et sante recou-
 ner, with longe youth and age of Restor-
 urer, avec longue ieunesse et biellesse Restorier,
 I hadde leste my harte all togyther with you, as
 ieusse laisse mon coeur totalement avec vous, cōe
 in the place of this worlde, where lyeth all his thoughtes
 ou lieu de ce monde ou gisent toutes les pensces
 and affections most despyed, prayenge the swete Jesu
 et affectiōs plus desirēz priant le doulz Jhesus a
 thus most high & most illustre and most excellent lady
 tant treshault, et tresillustre, & tresexcellente, dame
 to give you the hole fulfylling of your noble desyres,
 Mary, vous doner l'entier de vous nobles desirs,

Amen.

Confabulation betwene the lady Mary, &
 her servant Giles, touching the peace.



Howe ye thewe
Mary. Coment Giles, vous monstres
 well that ye have great cure and care to reache
 bien quauēs grāt cure et soing de mair n
 me, whan ye do you absent so from me.
 Dye quāt vous vo^r absētes ainse de moy. Cil Cer-
 ly me thynke that I am continually here
 tes madame il me semble q̄ suis cōtinuellemēt icy.
 ye and where were ye yester day at soupper I pray you
 Ma. Voire, & ou estēs vo^r hier a soupp ie vo^r prie
 Ma. Giles

4
 Crewly ye have reason
Eplis. Veritablement madame vous auez raison
 for I forgate my selfe yester night, by cause of company and
 car ie mentroubliay estoit a cause de compagnie et
 of I pray you faire le mas
 de cōmunication. **Ma.** Je vous prie beau sire fati-
 he vs patrons of your for
 ctes nous peonniere de vōstre cōmunication, car
 I suppose that it was of some good purpose
 festime quelle estoit de quelque bon purpos. **Epl.**
 Crewly it was of the peas the which is
Certes madame elle estoit de la paix, la quelle (cō-
 they saye is proclaimed by all this realme,
 on disoit) est proclamee par tout ce royaume.
 Of what maner I pray you, and of what
Ma. De quelle maniere ie vous prie, et de quelle
 lasting Of the lasting Shall god answer you
 duree. **Gil.** De la duree vo^r respondra dieu ma-
 But of the forme and maner can I write and
dame. Mais de la forme maniere vo^r scay ie bien
 report, the which is cried as well in this realme
 rapporter, laquelle est crie tant en ce royaume
 of Englands as of France, so longe as the noble king
Dengleterre come de France, et tāt que le noble roy
 pour father (which god preserve) Shall live
Henry vostre pere (que dieu veuille garder) viura
 and the frenche king likewise with the addition of a
 et le roy francois pareillemēt avec l'additiō d'un
 day. Shall that day be annexed to it and com-
 tout. **Ma.** fault il que ce iour soit anere et com-
 prehended. ye verely wherfore
prie. **Gil.** Ouy certes madame. **Ma.** Pourquoi
 me thinketh that it is but Nat
 il me semble que se nest que superfluitte. **Gil.** Non
 for save pour for the addition of a day peld the
 est: salue vostre grace, car l'additiō d'un iour rēt
 tyme infinit, for the lasting of the worlde is but a
 le terme infiny, car la duree du monde nest qu'un
 day. I would sayne vnderstande how that
 tout. **Ma.** J'entenderois voullentier cōment cela
 peule

may be, how be it I loue better that for this
peult estre, touttesuois iayme mieulx, que pour le
esme you do declare vnto me what it is of peas well
preset vous me declarés q cest que paix. **Gil. Bien**

I shall hepe to you the exposition of that days
madame se vous garderay lexposition de ce iour
for when I shall teach you the spere, the whiche partene
pour quāt vous apprendray lespere la quelle diuē
and serue to that purpose, and touchinge the peas how be it that
et sert a ce propos, et touchant la paix, combiē que
after the holy lecters it excede and surmonte all
selon la sainte lecture elle excede et surmonte tous
the wyttes, I shall recyte you. neuerthelesse that that of it
les sens, ie vous reciteray nonobstant ce que dict

Capit. Justin sayth speakyng of the worde of
monsieur saint Augustin parlant de la parolle de
god, in his synthy and seuē Omelie, howe be it that
Dieu, en la nonante septieme Homelie combien quil
it shulde be necessary to make you vnderstande first
seroit necessaire vous donner a entendre premier

how many kyndes of maner of warres ben.
ment quantes especes ou maniere de guerres sont
how is there more than one maner.

Ma. Comment en est il pl^r dune maniere. Gil. Cer

there is warre betwene reame and reame
tes madame il ya guerre entre royaume et royaume
betwene towne and towne, betwene parisse and parisse, betwene
entre ville et ville, entre paroisse et paroisse, entre
linages, betwene neyghbores, betwene the man and the wyfe
lignage, entre voisins, entre lhome et la femme,
and betwene the body and the soule, the whiche is the worst, & more
et entre le corps et lame, la quelle est la pire, & plus
daungerous of the others, but touchyng the peas

dangerouse des aultres, mais quant est de la paix
Capit. Justin in the place aboue al edged, sayth that it is
saint augustin ou lien dessus allague, dict, que cē
clennesse of thought. Peas of courage, sim
serenite de pensee, Tranguilite de courage, Simp
plenesse of harte bonde of loue Felicity of charite
plesse de cœur, Lien damour, Cōpaigne de charyte

Ma. si delirul

bicker of strey Pacifier of
 destruiserelle destrif, Apaisereffe de Batailles,
 molispenge of angre vainquishpunge proude men,
 mollifierelle de courroux, vainquerelle des orguil-
 leus, amour dhumilité, en mitigant les discordez.
 and agreynge ennemyes nor schynge but his,
 et concoz dant ennemis, non cerchant laultrey, non
 that can not hate, callynge nothynge his, that can not
 scauant hoir, rien ne reputant sien, nō scauant soy
 exalte hym nor be proude, teachynge to loue, pleasante
 exault et ne enorguellit, ensegnāt aimer, plaisante
 to euery body, he that had it, let him kepe it, he that lese it, let hym
 a chescun, quil la tiens sy la garde, quil la pert sy la
 seke it. For he that in it shall not be founde god the father
 cerche Car qui en elle trouue ne, sera dieu le pere
 hym shall plucke out of his roote, & the sōne shall discherite & of the
 le disracinera, et le filz le disheritera, et du saint es-
 holy goost shalbe vnknewen, wherof the same be wyllyng vs
 p'it sera descōgneu, dont itelle trinité nous veulle
 to defende and kepe. In my god it is a greate
 despendre et garder. Ma. En mon dieu cest grand
 chynge of peace, I require the swete Iesus to main-
 chose que de paix ie requier le douz Ihesus la no-
 rayne it to vs.
 voullot maintenant.

Amen.

**Here foloweth certaine verses, sende to
 the noble lady Mary, for to lerne the,
 her scole maister beyng sycke.**



To you most souerayne
 Vous tressouueraine maistresse
 I sende these verses, wyllynge to signifye
 Jenuoy ces verse, boullant stresse
 My great dolour and that moze me oppresse
 Ma graund doulleur et que plus moppresse

Ac

That I may not you serue and trache
Ne vous pouois seruir et enseigner
 Than for to suffer sickness and danger
Que de souffrir maladie et dangier
 wherfore, if it please so moche do to your grace
Pourquoy, sil plaist tant faire a vostre grace
 Them for to rede some litle space
Les bouilloir lire quel qui petite espace
 My hope is that better therof ye shalbe
Mon espoir est que mieulx vous en fauldez
 and by that point also shal excuse me
Et par ce point ausy mesculeres

We thynketh that other than you ought not
Il me semble quaultre que vous ne doibt
 To be iudged of my greuous payne
Estre iuge de ma grieveuse paine
 By cause also that other myght not
Pource ausy quaultre ne pouroit
 Not knowynge the whiche lede me
Non connoissant la cause qui me maine
 But as for you, I knowe that ye be
Mais quant a vous, say queistes certaine
 Of the good wyl and greates
Du bon bouilloir, et grande affection
 That I haue to serue, and the
Quay deservir, et la deuotion
 To fulfill of herte and of power
Pour accomplir de de cuer et de pouoir
 All that whiche please to the noble kynge to wyl
Tout ce quil plaist au noble roy bouilloir

Amonge the monethes whiche fulfill the yere
Entre les mois qui accomplissent l'an
 Two there ben specially
Deux en y a especiallement
 whiche haue done me yuell, great sorrowe and harme
Qui m'ont fait deuil, grant ennuy et ahan

Aa.iii.

Este

It may not be that I say otherwise
Estre ne pult que se die aultrement
 Ofce I haue sene theyr maner and how
Souuent ay veu leur maniere et cōment
 They me haue entreated without any deseruyng
Ils mont traicte, sans lauoir deserui
 By cause they ben of courage bounded
Pource quilz sont de courage asseruy
 Fewer louynge the workes of the springe of the pere
Naimant iamaiz les œures de printemps
 Rather without cesse them doth yuell at all tymes
Ains sans cesser leur font mal en tous temps

The principall the whiche moze I me complayne
Le principal du quel plus ie me plains
 In his blason hym doth name
En son blason se fait nommer Decembze
 By hym I haue made wepyng and syghes many
Par luy ay fait pleurs et soupiers mains
 Fewer shall it be but I shall
Ia ne sera que ne men remembze
 He and me haue raynyed a
Luy et Januier, mont tollu bng membze
 whiche in shall make that so longe as I shall lyue
Qui me fera que tant que ie viuray
 In great sorowt from hewlforth shall go
En grand doulleur doze nauant iray
 wherfore I dyde that in great milancoly
Parquoy ie crains quen grand merencolie
 At the latter ende shall behoue that therof I lose my lyfe
Ce fin fauldra que ien perde la vie

If it hap not that the springe
Sansy maduient, que printemps gracieuz
 To his comynge the whiche is rygh
A la venue la quelle est prouchaine
 Beholdynge me and seynge so pitious
Me regardant et voyant sy piteuz
 To heale me pur him not in payne
De me guerir ne se inecte en paine

Car

For truly, I know well that he loue me
Car pour certain, bien te scay quil mayme
 By him first in this worlde was I put
Par luy p̄mier en ce monde fus mys
 With that alwayes he hath him indeuer
Auec ce tousiours sest entermyg
 Durynge his tyme, to do me comme god d
Son temps durant de me faire du bien
 wherof from euer I shall pelde me for his
Dont a iamaiz ie me tiendray pour sien

whiche I requyre that so it may hap
Ce que requier ainsy pult aduenir
 To the ende that to god I may crye mercy
Afin qua dieu puisse crier mercy
 Of my synnes, and to go and come
De mes pechez, et aller et venir
 In scrupnge you, for to satisfie also
En vous seruant, pour satisfaire ausy
 To your good dedes, that doentreate me so
A vous biens faitz, qui me trattez ainsy
 wherfoze next god, I am moze bounde
Dont apres dieu, ie suis plus obligez
 To your grace, than to any vnder heuyn.
A vostre, grace, qua nul dessus les cieulz
 wherfoze in the meane tyme that I shall be in this worlde
Pourquoy tandis que seray en ce monde
 I shall him requyre to kepe you pure and cleane
Luy requerray vous garder pure et monde
Amen.

**A communication betwene the lady Mary and
 her Amener, her grace beinge with almyg
 family in the parke of theukesbery**



Wh, mayster Amener I had
 Arp. Ha, monsieur laumosnier, ie neusse
 not wened that ye had so forgotten me,
 pas cuidẽ q meusse ainses mise en oubly.
 Las

Now madame Because that ye well knowe
Lau. Comment madame. **Ma.** Pour ce q̄ bien scay
 that I solitarie, and of all company desir-
 es, que moy solitaire, & de toute compagnie desti-
 tute. ye haüme forsaken and left. **God**
 tuer, boys maues relenque et laisse. **La.** Ja dieu
 forbide madame that it be as ye say, for
 ne veulle madame que soit come vous dictes, Car
 it is not to you unknown, that I must needs
 il ne vous est point incongneu, quil ne me faulte
 be with your counsaile, leaunge to them of my power,
 estre avec vostre conseil, les assistât de mon pouoir
 I had wened neuertheless that for the regard
Ma. Jeusse cuide toutesfois que pour le regar-
 of me and of your profit, ye had made you to be
 de moy et de vostre p̄ouffit vous, vous eussés fait
 dispensed. **Crewly** madame there is nothyng in my
 dispenser. **Lau.** Certes madame il nest chose en mon
 power that I ne dyd for the honour of you, howe
 pouoit que ie neseüss pour lhonneur de vous com-
 be it that I do not vnderstande well what thyng ye do thynke,
 bien que nentens pas bien quelle chose vous p̄sēs
 spekyng of dispence and of profit. I vnderstand by
 parlant de dispence et de p̄ouffit. **Ma.** Jentens p̄
 the dispence, that ye myght excuse you from the coun-
 la dispence, que vous vous pouiēs escuser du con-
 saile for a tyme. And thouchyng the profit, ye
 seill pour vng temps. Et touchât le p̄ouffit, vous
 knowe that whan I dyd praye your frenche, ye dyd
 scaues que quāt ie p̄isoie vostre francois bo⁹ mal
 warrant me that within a yere I shulde speke as good
 seuriez que dedens vng an le parleroie ausly bon
 or better than you, wherefoze by such condicion
 ou melleur que vous, pourquoy par telle cōdiciō
 that so myght be trustinge more of the power of the
 quainsy peult estre, me cōfiât plus du pouoir du
 kyng my father, and of the good lady my mother than of myn own
 roy mon pere, et la bonne dame ma mere q̄ du mien
 dyd promys you a good benefyce for the impetracion
 vous p̄omis vng bon benefice, pour lympetratiō
 du

of the whiche me thinke that ye ought to do some by
 du quel il me semble que deuriez faire quelque di
 ligence. Crewly madame, that which me moued so
 ligence. Lau. Certes madame, ce que me meult a
 to assure you was especially because of
 vous ainsi assuer et fust especiallement a cause de
 your singuler vnderstandynge: for the whiche ye ought
 vtre singulier entedement, pour le quell vo^r debuez
 wel to thank god. And for that also that after the
 bien dieu remerci^r. Et pour ce aussi que selon le
 philosopher, the soule of the person is as the table planed
 philosophe lame de la p^{er}sonne est come la table rasce
 or as the perspectif or glasse in the whiche the kyndnes
 ou come le p^{er}spectif ou mirouer ou quel les especes
 and similitudes of thynges ben shewed, spirituallye
 & similitude des choses sont representees, signan
 durynge the tyme that the sayd glasse, or table
 ment durant le temps que le dict mirouer ou table
 is not infected. deturbat, nor made foule by
 nest point contaminee deturpee, ne maculee par pe
 synne, wherefore contemplyng the same similitude to haue
 che, pourquoy contemplat icelle similitude auoit
 confirmite and agreynge to your grace might nat
 conformit^e & conuenience, vostre grace, ne peuz
 say that, that I saye, In good say I thanke
 non dire ce que ce dis. Ma. En bone foy ie merceye
 our lord and shall thanke durynge my lyfe of all
 nostre seigneur & merciray tant que viuray de tout
 the that it hath pleased to hi to gyue me, howbeit
 tes les graces qui luy a pleu me doner, combien q
 that of such wherof ye me please I haue to no knowe
 de telles dont vous me louez nay ie point de con
 lege, but all such wordes set asyde
 gnoissance, mais toutes telles parabolles arriere
 I shall nat be neuertheles of you content withoute
 mises ie ne seray toutesuoi^{es} la de vo^r cõtente sans
 mende without fault madame, the mende
 amende. Lau. Infalliblement madame, la mende
 shall be made at your iugement for I haue me exp^{er}ied
 sera faicte a vostre arbitremet, car ie me suis exille
 Bb. et ban

and banished from all libertie for the love of your ser
 & bānp d toute libertē pour la mort de vostre ser
 vice, wherfore nothing to me shalbe possible, that hauing
 uice, pourquoy rien ne me sera possible, que aiant
 pour ^{I do not falsel to my power}
 vostre comandement, Je n'acōplisse a mon pouoir.
 Marye. Certes ie vous mercey monsieur Lau-
 nee certifieng you surely that such is my
 mofuer vous assureāt tresacertes que telle en ma
 trust in you. ^{Truely} madame, pe
 fiance en vous Lau. Pour certayn madame, vous
 may thereof wel be assured ^{Now} than
 en pouez bien estre assuree. Mary. O? biē donc-
 I comande you that ye visite me as often
 ques ie vous comande que me vistēs le plus sou-
 as goodly and conuenientlye may do, and
 uent que bonnement & licitement faire poultes, &
 specially at dinner, to the ende to talke and to
 espécialleminēt a disner et affin de confabuler & comu-
 speake with me. ^{It shalbe done madame, if it}
 nicquer avec moy. Lau. Il sera fait madame, se
 please god. ^{We than that there haue no}
 dieu plaisir. Ma. Voiez dōcques quyl ny ait poit
 faute. ^{No more shall haue.}
 de faulte. Lau. Non ara il madame.

¶ Finis.

¶ Confabulation betwene the lady Mary and
 the Treasorer of her chambze her husband
 adoptyue her noble grace beyng with-
 drawen with priuy cōpany in a place
 solitary, bycause of the deth,
 for introduction of the
 frenche tongue.

¶ Amour.

¶ Of loue.

Ma-



In good faith my husbände I can not
 Try. En bone foy mon mary ie ne me
 me emmaile p'nough, how I haue no more
 puis assez esbahir comēt ie nay plus
 comforte of you, for in that tha I may
 de comfort de vo⁹, car en ce q̄ ie puis

ly. y. take great care of your goute the
 beoir, vous vous soutiez plus de vostre goute (la
 whiche one hath tolde me that y. haue, than ye do of
 quelle on ma dit que vous auez, que ne faictes de
 pour v^{re} p^{re} Certainly madame, pour grace
 vostre fēme. Le. Tre. Certes madāe vostre grace
 hath sayd reuere, how be it that it is agaynst my will and
 a dit verite, combien q̄ ce soit cōtre ma voullēte et
 by force In my god with great payne may I
 par force. Ma. En mon dieu a grant paine puis ie
 beleue that the goute might with holde a good husbānd ha
 croire que la goute peult retenir vng bon mary a
 vngne come loue to his wyfe, specially be
 ant quelque amour a sa femme, especiallement es
 lunge to mygh of her, but he shalbe more offence to vplite
 tant sy p^{re}s d'elle, qui ne la vīst plus souuent vīst
 her. without faute it is an harde ryng and dis

ter, Le. Tre. Infalliblemēt cest chose ardue a dis
 fuce to go to him that hath neither fote nor legges, neuertheles
 ficille daller a q̄ na ne pieds ne iambes, nonobstāt
 as your grace hath sayd, loue both moche.

que cōme v^{re} grace a dit amoz fait moult. Ma, Je
 pray you good s^{er}, to declare me what it is of loue
 vo⁹ p^{re}ie beau sire decleres moy que cest q̄ d'amour
 for ye be a doctour and well lettered, with that that a
 car vo⁹ estes docteur et bien lettres avec ce q̄ vng
 good husbānde ought to teche his wyfe, wherfore I
 bon mary doit endoctriner la fēme, pour quoy ie
 pray you, to do your deuour to teche yours.
 vous p^{re}ie de faire deuoir d'endoctriner la vostre.

Infallibly madame the mater is to h^{er}ge
 Tre. Sās faulte madāe la matiere est trop haulte
 for my symplenesse, but for nat be wyllynge to disobey you
 po⁹ ma sibleste mais po⁹ nō vo⁹ boulloir desobair

Bb. ii. a mon

with my power I shall shewe you of it willingly that: that I thereto
a mon pouoir ie vous en diray volentier ce que ten
of can I requite you therof my good husbände, for
scay. Ma. Je vous en requite mon bon mary, car
I knowe you such that ye can not say cuple.
ie vous congnois tel que ne scartez mal dire.

Nowe than say that it please you so
Le Tre. Or sus donqs puis quaincy vous agree

Now it is that I fynde thre maners of loue, that
Il est vray q ie treuve trois maniere d' amour, cest
is to say, and the

a scauoir filiale, matrimoniale, & animale: La

is that same whiche the father & the mother haue to their chyld
filiale est celle que le pere et la mere ont a leur en-
de, the whiche is nat not easy to pour

fât la quelle nest pas facile ne aysée a vostre grace
to vnderstande, that that it please god that ye vnder-

stande, iusques a ce quil plaise a dieu que l'en-
fât de si by experiens, for the chyld know neuer

des par experiēce, car lenfant ne cognoist iamaig
the loue that the father and mother haue toward him, vnto the

lamour que le pere et mere ont vers luy, iusques a
tyme that he be made father or mother bycause that such loue

ce quil soit fait pere ou mere pour ce q telle amour
is nat reciproque or retournig, but rather comyng fro god to the fynde

nest pas reciproq ains venant de dieu au premier
father or prothoplauste it goist and retourne to god from

pere ou prothoplauste sen va et retourne a dieu de
father to the sonne. The seconde loue is called matrimoniall

pere en filz. La seconde amour est dicte matrimo-
the whiche is of meruellouse strength and vertu

niale la quelle est de merueilleuse energie et vertu
specialy whan the marriages ben made after

especiallement quât les mariages sont faitz selon
the ordynance of god that is to say, by true loue, and

lozdonance de dieu, cest a dire par vray amour, et
if it were nat for to sch we poulite, I n pght recite you

sy ce nestoit pour non estre pouliz, ie vous poulroie
of many women whiche ben ded and herished

reciter de plusieurs fēmes q sont mortes et perle
pour

for the loue of their husbands, and many men
 pour lamour de leur maris, et plusieurs hommes
 Iphewyse for the loue of their wyues, And touchyng
 semblablemēt, pour lamour de leur fēmes. et quāt
 to the thirde, that is saide animalle. He is without con-
 ala tierce qui est dicte animalle, elle est sans con-
 paracion stronger than the others because it is the
 paracion plus forte que les autres, pource que cest
 loue that the soule hath to his body, the which is so greete
 lamour q̄ lame a, a son corps, laquelle est sy gran-
 that nothing is so moche loued in this worlde, that the man
 de, que riens n'est tant ayine en ce monde, que l'hō-
 ne renounce and refuse, syt that he suffre his
 me ne renounce et refuse, premier quil souffre son
 soule to depart from his body, noz nothyng is so terrible
 ame departir de son corps, ne riens n'est sy terrible
 painfull, noz dangerous, that the man ne shulde suffre, before
 penible, ne dangereux, q̄ l'hōme ne tollerast, auant
 or rather thā to suffre deuoyce or departyng betwene his soule & his
 souffrir deuoyce ou separattō entre son ame et son
 body, because that nothyng is moze to be dyede than the
 corps, pource que rien n'est plus a craindre que la
 death. Acuertheles all these premisses set asyde
 mort: Neantmoins toutes ces premisses madame
 god the creatour hath loued vs aboue all the
 dieu le createur, nous a aime p̄dessus toutes les
 abouesaid lours, For touchyng the filiall, he hath
 dessus dictes amours, Car touchant la filialle, il
 sende his dere sonne here beneth, for to redeme vs and
 enuoie son chier filz ca bas, pour nous redimer et
 from the paynes of hell to deliuer, makyng him of a lord a seruaunt
 des paines dēfer deliuerer le faisāt de seigneur serf
 and of immortall mortall, suffring him, rather to dye
 et de immortel mortel le souffrāt plus tost mourir
 for vs, than in hauinge pyte of him to leaue vs in
 pour nous, que en aiant pite de luy nous laisser en
 perill. And touchyng the howe
 periclitacion. Et touchant la matrimoniale, com-
 be it that he hath loue inestimable to his swete mother
 bien quil eut amour inestimable a sa douce mere


the virgin Mary, that notwithstanding ynge, he hath chosen
 la vierge marie, ce nonobstant Il a pze esleu plus
 rather to dye for vs leauynge her desolat and descons-
 tost mourir pour nous, la laissant desolée & descon-
 forted, then in her comfortyng to leaue vs in perdition
 fortee, que en la consolât nous laisser en perdition
 And as touchinge to the assaile, what so euer loue that he hath had
 Et quant a l'animalle, quelque amour quil ayt eu
 to his soule, and what so euer great feare that he hath had to dye
 a son ame, a quelq grât peur quil ait eubt de mou-
 yet hath he neuertheles made him selfe for vs obedient vi-
 rir, sy sest il touttesfois faict pour nonsobediēt iul
 to the death of the crosse: There is madame that that I
 ques a la mort de la croix: Ueda madame ce que ie
 can of loue. Now be it neuertheles that the worlde do h
 scay damour: Combien touttesfoies q le mode vse
 vse of dyuerse other maner of loue, as of
 De dyuerles aultres manieres damours, come de
 richesses & tempozall goodes, and other folyshe loue
 richesses & biens tēpozels, & aultres folles amours
 whiche do merite better to be called folies than loue
 q meritēt mieulz destre appellees folies quamour,
 wherfore I loue them so, prayeng pour noble
 pourquoy ie men passe a tant priant vostre noble
 grace to pardone me in that that I haue sayde In
 grace me pardonet en ce que ien ay dict. Ma En
 good forthe my husbände I thanke you of good herte
 bōne verite mō mary ie vous mercie de bon cœur
 for ye haue you eyght truly acquited toward
 car vous vous estes resloiallemēt acquitte enuers
 pour wyfe. I requere to god madame,
 vostre femme. Le Tre. Je requier a dieu madame
 that it may to you in such wyse profite that in loynge
 qui vous puisse tellemēt prouffiter que en armāt
 god about all thynges, and the good grace of the
 dieu par dessus toutes choses et la bōne grace de
 hyng pour father, and the good lady pour mo: her of
 roy vostre pere, et la bonne dame vostre mere de
 trewe loue fillall ye may loue your husbād
 b:ate amour filialle, vous puissies aimer bēe mary
 quand

when good shall gve you one, of good and trewe
 quant dieu vous en donra bng, de bonne & loialle
 loue in suche wyse that it may be to the
 amour matrimonialle, de sorte que ce soit au salu
 helth of your soule do pleased our loide
 de vostre aine. Ma. Ainsi le me veulle nostre sei-
 gnur par sa bonte octroier
 by his goodnes to graunt me

¶ Anima:

What it is of the soule in general and speciall
 after philosophy and saint Aspydoze, by
 way of dialogue betwene lady the
 Mary, & her servant Gyles.

¶ Anima quid.


 After that well I meremembze I haue
 Mary. Selon que bien me recozde, ie vo
 herde here-aboue speke of the soule, but neuer
 ap ouy cy dessus pier delaine mais tout
 thelesse ye haue nat declared what it is, wherfore
 cellois vo naves point declare q cest, pourquoy
 I wolde of it saye here somwhat. Cressy
 ten bouldoie bien ouir quelque chose, Gil. Certes
 madame it shulde be necessary to be better lerned
 madame il seroit necessaire destre mieulz qualifiez
 in good letters than I am for to satisfie to your
 es bone lettres que ne suis pour satisfaire a vostre
 question. It is nat to me unknown that
 questio. Ma. Il ne mest point incongneu que ne
 ye be nat of the best lettered of the world, howbeit that I
 stes pas des mieulz lectres du mode, cobien q poit
 doubte nat but of it ye can somwhat, wherfore take
 ne doubte q neuscaues quelq chose, pourquoy gar
 bede that the lytell that ye therof can, be nat hydde to me.
 des q le petit q vo en scaues ne me soit point cele,
 Gil:

Certe il est ^{that the philosophers} **que les philosophes** ^{haue spo}
Gyl. Il est bien vray ^{ken therof, albeit that it hath not ben sufficiently} **en ont** ^{specially}
parle ia soit que pas na este souffisamēt ^{touchinge the soule reasonable, for some of them} **especialle**
ment touchant lame rationelle, ^{haue it esteime mortall, as Pliny among other that} **car aulcuns deulz**
lont estimē mortellē, ^{come Pline entre aultres qui} **come Pline entre aultres qui**
dit q tel sera lame appres la mort du corps, ^{sayth, that such, maybe the soule after the death of the body, as} **quelle**
elle estoit deuaunt la vie dicelluy, ^{we was before the life of the same, and it is not yet} **& il nest point en**
coze venu a ma congnoissance q le scripture sainte ^{come to my knowledge that the holy scripture}
en face mencion aulcune. ^{doth make of it any mention} **Mais puis q vostre plai** ^{But sith that pouce pleas}
sir en tel ie vous reciteray ^{sure is such, I shall recite you} **(me soubmetant a la co** ^{submittinge me to the co}
rection de vostre grace & de toute plone scauante) ^{rection of your grace, and of all persons conninge)}
ce q ien ay peu ceullir des philosophes, & de saint ^{that which I haue therof gathered fro the philosophers, & of the ho}
Idore. ^{ly s. Idore: wherfore it shall please you to knowe, that all} **Pourquoy il vous plaira scauoer, q tout**
tes choses crees de Dieu soubz le globe lunaire sont ^{things created of god vnder the moone ben}
ou ellement seules, ^{or elemented onely as precious stones and} **come pierres precieuses &**
autres avec tous metaulz, ou sont elementes et ^{other with all mettalles, or be elemented and} **vegetables.** ^{As herbes, tree, and all ma}
Vegetables, come herbes, arbres, et toutes mani ^{nir of plantes, Or ben elemented v: getable and}
eres de plantes, ou sont ellementes vegetables et ^{sensitiues. As ben all beastes, byrdes, fye}
sensitiues, come sōt toutes Bestes, oiseaulz, pois ^{mes, reptyll them mouynge from place to other, Or ben}
songs reptiles se mouuant de lieu a autre, ou sont ^{elemented vegerable sensitiues and resonable} **as**
elementes vegetables sensitiues et resonelle, come
sont

ben the men whiche haue in them all the four
Sont les hōmes lesquels ont en eux toutes les qua
 propriētés about saide. For as touching the body (which
tre propriétés dessus dicte: Car quant au corps (qui
 is a masse element; b) it is but a conglutina
est vne masse elementee) ce n'est que vne cōglutina
 tion and combination of the four elements, in the whiche
tion et combination des quatre elements et quels
 our lord hath planted the soule vegetable by the whiche
notre seigneur a planté lame vegetable p la quelle
 it groweth in length, largenes, and depnes which one calle
il croist en longueur, largeur, & pfundite, qu'on dit
 the dimensions, because that the said vegetable hath in her
trois dimēsiōs, a cause q la dicte vegetable a en soy
 four vertues, by the whiche she subsisteth and groweth
quatre vertus par lesquelles elle subsiste & croist,
 that is to saye the attractiue, or appetitiue, the retentiue
cest a scauoir l'attractiue ou appetitiue, la retentiue
 the digestiue, and expulsiue A body may not
la digestiue, et expulsiue. Une personne ne peult
 eat without appetit, nor may not digest without holding that meate
mēger sans appetit, ne ne peult digerer sans retenir
 or he pig i his stomack that which is eatē, nor may not grow by the ver
ce qui est menge ne ne peult croistre par la vertu
 tue of such digestion without expulsion or euacuation
De telle digestion sans expulsion ou auccuation
 for it is neede or to destroye the meate receaued
car il est de necessitē ou d destruire la viande receu
 in the stomack, or to be destroyed by the same. But to be well ynge
en le stomac, ou est destruit p icelle. Mais vouloit
 to warne your grace of al that which doth depend to this pur
aduertir vostre grace de tout ce qui depēd a ce po
 pose, whiche be to be well ynge to declare all the philosophy
pos, seroit vouloit declarer toute la philosophie
 naturall with all physike, and astrologie in new
naturelle avec toute phisicq, & astrologie in com
 ynge with all the mouynge of nature, wherof proce
prenant tous les mouuemens de nature, dont pce
 de and spynge all corruption and generation
dent & pulullent toute corruption & generation
 Cc. i. Decla

expoundinge what it is of the xii. signes of the zodiacque with
 declarac que cest des douze signes du zodiacq avec
 the seven planettes and all the starres fixe, and to
 les sept planettes & toutes les estoilles fixe, & mo
 Wee how the saide xii. signes having relation
 sice comment lesdictz douze signes asantz relatiō
 and similitude to the four ben divided
 et similitude aux quatre elements sont distinguez
 by four triplicites the which by holde and kepe
 par quatre triplicites lesquels sustinent & main-
 by the four saide four myght and to the
 tiennent les deuât dittes quatre puissances et aux
 whiche ont ought to have recourse for to put them agayne in
 quelz ou doit auoir recours pour les remettre en
 order by medecine what by some accident they ben
 orde par medecine quāt par aucun accident ilz sōt
 alterat. But for to chewe to wondyfull prolixite and that
 alteres. Mais pour euer sy enoyme prolixite et q
 I have hope here and there therof to talke some time with
 say espoir cy et la den cōmuniquer alcūe fois avec
 pour grace with that, that of it ye haue some hat
 vostre grace, avec ce, quen aues quelque petit gou
 sted in learninge the Ephemerides I will passe it so
 ste en apprenant Lephemerides ie men passeray a
 Nowe turninge agayne to our purpos the soude vege-
 tant Or retournant a nre purpos laine vegeta-
 table as I have tolde you is setted within the
 ble come ie vous ay dit est plantee dedens la puis-
 myght elemented, the which doth upholde her as the ves-
 sance ellemente, la quelle la sostient cōe le bail-
 cell doth the lyker, and the sensitiue nother more no lesse is
 seau fait la liqueur, & la sensitiue ne pl⁹ ne mais est
 setted within the vegetable, as the rationell is within
 plantee dedēs la vegetable, cōe la rationelle ē dedēs
 the sensitiue, the which ye may clerely percepe by that that
 la sensitiue ce q pouez clereinēt apcepuoir par ce q
 when the body begynneth to faile by age or other
 quāt le corps 2mēce a diffailir pbiellese ou aulere
 wise, the vegetable lyfe her selfe by and by, ycause that the appetite
 mēt, la vegetable se pert incōtinēt, po: ce q lappetit
 se pert

begyn to sayle with retatnag & volding, which make to perish the se,
 se pert avec retectio & euacuacio, q fait perir la selsi
 titue, for as the person lese the lute and the digestyon.
 tme, car cõe la personne pert lappetit & le degeret,
 also soone begynne he to tige the swete bytter, and the
 tout aussy tost cõmẽce il a iuger le Douls amer, & la
 bytter swete and sayth that he seeth that whiche other may not se
 met Douls, & dit q̃l voit ce q̃ les aulcs ne puenẽt ve
 and also of all his fyue wittes, & lphewse thintellectiue
 dit, & aily de to⁹ les cinq sēs & p psequẽt litellectiue
 lese the reason and the iudgement or thinges for the be
 pert la raisõ & le discernemẽt des choses, car elle es
 pnye in the body humaine can not attayne to any know
 tant ou coꝝp humain ne peult puenir a aulcune co
 lege not beyng inspired ghostly without it be by the
 gnoissace (selle nest ispirẽe diuinemẽt) ce se nest p le
 meane of the fyue wittes apertaining to the sensitiue, for b:foze that
 moie des cinq sēs aptenāt a la selsitiue, car deuāt q̃
 pe do vnderstande any thinge, it behoued fy:ste that it be to
 vo⁹ entẽdẽ aulcune chose, il fault p̃miermẽt q̃l vo⁹
 pou thewed by the sight, by meane of colours or by the hea:ing
 soit mōstre p la veu p moie de coulleur ou p louye
 by the meane of lounde or voyce, or by smellfyng, gousting & tastig
 moiẽnāt son ou voir, ou p flatter, goustet & taster,
 the which thinge so perceived by the fyue wittes, is sende
 a q̃lle chose aily apceue p les cinq sēs, est enuotee
 to the comon wit whiche lyeth in the foremost parte of the braine, the
 au cõmũ sēs q̃ gist en la ptie āterioze du cerueua le
 whiche goeth incontinently to the memory in the which he syn
 q̃l sen va incontinẽt a la remẽbzace en la q̃lle il treu
 de what thing it is after that one haue hym somtyme tarde and
 ue q̃lle chose ces selõ quon luy a aultrefois dit & ap
 thought, wherfoze it appere clerly that these thre mightes
 pris, po' quoy il apperit cleremẽt q̃ ces trois puillā
 being in man and nameq onely by the name of soule
 ces estāt en lhõe & nōmee sullemẽt p le nom de ame
 reasonable, in takynge denominacion of the most noble,
 raisonable en pzenāt denominaciõ de la pl⁹ noble
 that is to vnderstande of her which doth discesse, ben lankynge the
 q̃ est entẽdre de celle q̃ discerne sont depẽdātes les
 Cc. ii. bnes

one of the others, and we iudge clerely that the sayd
vnes des aultres, et diiudicōs cleremēt q̄ la dicte
intellectue ou rōnelle is without comparation moze ex
cellente than the others, wherefoze we iuge her
cellēte que les aultres, pourquoy nous la iugeōs
a thought of vnderstandynge incarnate the whiche is parpe
vne pensee ou intellegēce incarnee, laquelle ē ppe
tuall and immortall by cause that she is created to thymage
tuelle & immortelle pource quelle est cree a limage
of god almighty. And if you aske me of what
De dieu tout puissāt, & sy vous me demādes de q̄l
substance she is, I may say that it is fire spirituall, as
matiere elle est, ie puis dire q̄ cest feu espirituel cōe
ben the angels of god, the whiche shalbe in her byghe
sont les angels de dieu, la quelle sera en sa haulte
strength and prosperite, whan she shalbe separee from
vigueur & prosperite a loz quelle sera separee de
her body, by the meane of the whiche she is infatuate, for
son corps, par le moien du quel elle est ifatuee, car
by the vegetable myghe, with the whiche she is bounde,
par la vegetable puissāce, avec la quelle elle ē līee
she thynketh day and nyght to serue her body of dynke and
elle pense iour et nuyt a seruir, son corps de boire &
meate. And because of the sensitive, with the whiche she
menger, et a cause de la sensitive avec laquelle elle
is lykewise alied she hath her syght to genera
est semblablement alīee, elle a son respect a genera
tion, to prīde of lyfe, and to all lyfe sensible the
cīon, a orgueil de vie, & a toute vie sensuelle, qui
whiche yelde her blunt, rude, and forgetfull, and by the whiche she
la rend obtuse, rude & ignozante, & pourquoy elle
becometh spotted and cancred, as a harness of clere
Deuiēt tachee & enroulle, cōe vng harness ou clere
glasse doth cancre by humidite of rayne or other
miroier sen roullist par humidite de pluie ou aul
moistnesse, in suche wyse that by this meane she is all
tre moisteux, tellement que par ce moien elle est du
togedher blynded, and hath no knowlege of her pastu
tout aueuglee, & na nulle cōgnoissance de la pastu
re

re whereby she becometh lene and folpme. For ac
 ce par quoy elle deuient mesgre & ignozate, Car co
 the wyse mā saith, truth is the fore of the soule. Aristotile saith
 me dit le sage, verite est le past de l'ae: Aristotile dit
 that the soule is as a table made euen and clere polished in the
 que lame est come vne table rase et clere polie en la
 welche all maner shape and effigiation doth myne clerely
 quelle toutes formes & effigie relapsent clereinēt
 so well corpozates as incorpozates, bycause therof
 sybien corpozecz cōe in corpozecz, a cause de quoy
 we vnderstand with the angels, that is to saye, in the
 nous entendons avec les angeles, cest a dire tant
 meane tyme that she is nat canered by synne, as I haue
 dis quelle nest past entrouillee par peche, come iay
 sayd befoze: Here myght I open vnto you, what it is of
 dit deuant. Icy vo⁹ poulroy ie ouurir que cest den
 vnderstandpng actiue and passyble, but is this dornge shulde be
 tendemēt agent et passyble, mais en ce faisant ie se
 to idious, Crelly Gyles I laude pour
 roie trop tedieus. Ma. Certes Gyles ie los vostre
 persuation, for by that that ye haue sayd of it, I perceue clere
 parsuasion, car par ce quen aues dit iay parcoy cle
 lye, that it is nat possyble to declare it, the welche one may
 remēt quil nest possible a la declarer, ce quon peult
 coniect, by that that she doth resemble vnto god, & to be wyllynge
 coniecturer p ce quelle ressemble a dieu, et boulloir
 to declare his ymage shulde be wyllynge to do a thyng impos
 declarer son ymage seroit boulloir faire impos
 ble, bycause that he is incomprehensyble. Crelly
 ble pour ce quil est incomprehensyble. Gil. Cer
 ly madame pe saye the trauche, neuertheless that
 tes in adame vous dicte la verite nonobstant que
 the scripture wptnesed, that Moyses by the graunt of
 le scripture trefmoigne que Moyses par lotroy de
 god dyd merite to se his posteriozite, the welche is to
 dieu merita de veoir la posteriozite, qui est a en
 vnderstande, his workes, of the welche knowlege, the cas
 tendre ses ceuures de la quelle cognoissance les ca
 balistes doth make syfrie gates, that they name
 balistre sont cinquante portes (quilsournōment)
 Cc.iii. Dintel=

of intelligence, saying that the said Moyses had not but fourtye
 ditellygence, disât q le dit Moyses nen eust q quarâ
 and nyne, because that the firste is to knowe god frô th. be
 te neuf po'ce q la pmiere est congnoistre dieu p p'ri
 ginning which is impossible. But he may be known by
 us ce q est impossible. Mais il est bien congnoissible p
 posterius which is to vnderstâde his by operacions, as know-
 posterius q est a entêd'ze p les operacions, come co
 lege comunely cometh vnto vs for because that we do scrche
 gnissâce comunemêt no' viêt po'ce q no' p'scrutôs
 the causes by the dedes of them, and not to the contrarie
 les causes p les effectz dicelles, & nō poit aug'reaire
 frô hencforth I shall tell you of the philosophers of the whiche
 desormais ie vo' diray des philosophes desq'z les
 some haue saide that it is nombre mouing him selfe other
 bngs ô't dit q cest nōb'ze soy mesme mouuât les aul
 that it is made of atmos whiche ben parties not possible to deuide
 tres q'le é faicte de atmios q sont p'tiez indiuiduez
 or indiuisible. Others that it is fyre, the others that it is
 ou indiuisible. Aultres q cest feu, les aultres q cest
 aye, the others haue said that it is a maner of armonye
 air, les aultres ô't dit q cest vne maniere darmonie
 with others infinites opinions. But leuyng them
 avec daulters infiniez opiniôs. Mais les laissant
 there the prophete speakyng in oue lorde said. Al byethinge
 la Flaie le pphete plât en n're seigneur dit. Omne
 huc I made, whiche is to vnderstâde of the soules that our
 flatu ego feci, q est a entêd'ze des ames q nostre sei-
 lorde haue all created. and the speakyng of those
 gneur atouttes crees, & le Psalmistre plant dicel-
 soules sayth. He that created all herbes: whiche is to vnderstâde
 les dit. Qui finxit singulatim corda. cest a dire les
 the soules, for the hert is the principall membre of the man the
 ames, car le coeur é le principal mēb'ze de lhōine le
 whiche is the candelstyk of the soul: suitcinyng her by maner
 quel est le chādeler de lame la soustenât p maniere
 of speakyng as the candelstyk doth the candell, the whiche be
 de p'ler come le chādeler fait la chādelle, la q'le es-
 yng racionelle and quichen doth quichen inuisible and spirituall
 tât racionelle & sēsible viut'ie inuisiblemēt spūellmēt
 and merueillously all the membres and inwarde parties of
 et merueilleusemēt tous les mēb'zes & en'elles du

the body by the comādemēt of the ^{as well by within as by with}
 corps p le comādemēt du cāte^{tāt p dedēs come p de}
 out, in ministring ^{of one specable maner} to the spue
 hors, en administrāt de maniere idicible aux cinq
 writes the power, for the seeth by ^{the open, and here by the}
 cēs leur pouoir, car elle voit p les yeulz, et oyt p les
 eures, the smele and ^{by the noise trilles, and discerne the}
 ozeilles, odoze & flaire p les narilles, & discerne les
 saours by the ^{by the feelynge the reule and gouerne}
 scaueurs p le goust, p le tacte, elle regle & gouīne
 all the memores of the booy in generall, ^{the and}
 tous les mēbres du corps en general, elle subsiste &
 stande by four maner ^{of reasons, by wit, sapience}
 demeure p quat manieres de raisōs, p sēs, sapience
 and, wpll, the wpt doth partcyne to the lyfe, the cap-
 cogitaciō, et vauillēte, le sēs apptiēt a la vie, la sapi-
 ence to the vnderstandyng, the cogitation to the counsell, the wpll to
 ēce a lētendēmēt, la cogitaciō auz sēs, la boullēte a
 the defence, And how be it that the sayde soule be ^{one, the hath}
 la deffēce. Et combū q la dicte ame soit vnicq elle a
 neuer theles many ^{hyndes and rayment in her, for}
 toutesfois plusieurs especes & aoznamēten soy car
 wher the doth byeth she is called ^{spirit, whan the fele}
 la ou elle espire elle ē appellee esperit, quāt elle sēs
 one do call her wit, and whan the take strenght one call her cor-
 on la nōme sēs, & quāt elle pnt vigne: on la dit cour-
 rage, whan the vnderstande she is named vnderstandyng, whan
 rage, quāt elle entēo, elle est nōmēe entēdēmēt, quāt
 she discusse, one call her reason ^{whan she consente, one call}
 elle discerne, on la pelle raisō, quāt elle consēt, on la
 her wpll, and whan the remembre she is sayde ^{mes}
 nōme boullēt, & quāt elle remēbze elle est dicte me-
 moyr, and whan the ^{doth grow and encrease the}
 moire, et quāt elle degete & croist en multipliāt la
 vertue, she is called the soule, the whiche lūing is the
 vertu, elle est appellee lāe, la qlle vtuāt loiallemēt
 is the ymage of god, so pleasant that he of her make his chare
 est lūage de dieu, tant pleasant q l en fait la chare
 and his temple ^{as witnesseth my lord} sainte
 et son temple, come le trefinoigne monsieur Saint
 Paule sayeng.

Paule disant. Templum dei quod estis vos.

Les

• The beaultie of raymentes of her ben, that by the heretn she belemeth
Les aoznemētz dicelle sont, q par louye elle croist,
 she serche by desyre, and fynde by sapience she aske
elle cerche par desir, & treuve par sapience, elle de-
 by prayers, and receyue by grace, she hope by
mande p oraison, & recoit par grace, elle garde par
 m. henes, and help by mercy, by benign
humilite, & sequeure par misericorde, par benigni-
 nite forgyue, and aquere by teachinge, she wor
nite pardonne, & acquiert par doctrine, elle coin-
 ke by penaunce, by examples, she faire thyn
pose par penitence, par exemples, les belles cho-
 ges, and by cōnyng the clere and fayre, she is fre
les, & per sciences les cleres & nettes, elle est fran-
 by onely goodnes and by softenes, mansuetude, and
che, par seule bonte, & par leintz, mansuetude, et
 swetenes, plaine, she is by prudence discrete,
Doulceur, plaine, elle est par prudence circōspecte,
 and by cōplenes hole, by subtilite sobie, and by
& par simplicitē entiere, par subtilite sobie, & par
 iustice rightfull, she is nat hasty by impacience,
iustice droituriere, elle est longanime par paciēce,
 and by obedience redy, by good doyng pure and clene,
& par obedience preste, par bien faire pure & mōde
 and by hope abydyng by abstinence t. mpe
& par esperance attendable, par abstinence attem-
 rat, and chastite holy, by reioysing spī
pee, et par chastete sainte, par resiouissement spī-
 rituall and mery, and by confession open by marries
rituelle et ioteuse, & par cōfessiō ouuerte, par mar-
 dom aoznat and by unite catholique by concozde
tire aournee, et par vnite catholique, par concozde
 peaceble & by lone and delection of her neygh
pacifique, & par amour & delection de son prou-
 bour large and lyberalle, by charite parfait,
chain large & lyberalle p charite parfait. Ma. En
 Crewey I am ryght glad to here
bonne berite, Giles ie suis tressioteuse de vo^r auoir
 you, and you haue gyue me in your wordes colas and res
ouy et maues donnees en vo^r parolles soulas & re
 crea

creation. But I pray you good fr, tell vs
 creacion. Mais ie vous prie beau fr, dites nous
 something of the body and his workes. **Let**
 quelq chose du corps et de ses operations. **Et.** Cer-
 tainly The body as I haue tolde you
 sainement madame Le corps come ie vous ay dit
 here before is the vessel of the soule, and doth serue of none
 cydeuant est le vaisseau de lame et ne sert daultre
 other thynge but to beare the soule, how be it that some sayen,
 chose que de porter lame, combien que aucun diēt
 that the soule doth beare him, bycause that without her he is dethe
 que lame le porte, pour ce que sans icelle il est mort
 and may not stye ne moue. **But** letynge a spoe
 et ne se peult bouger ne mouuoir. Mais posposāt
 suche reasons: **Certe** it is that in his necessity he
 telles raisons. Il est veray quen ses necessites le
 must be holpen by him that wyl kepe the soule hole in a
 fault secourir qui veult garder lame saine en ung
 hole body in his hunger one must geue him meate and in
 corps sain, en la sain luy fault doner viande, & en
 his thirst drynke, in labour reste, slepe in werinesse
 sa soif aboivre, en labeure repos, sōpne en fatigatiō
 in tristesse and heuinesse myrth in sorowe comfōrt and
 en tristesse & ennuy armonie, en doulloir confort et
 helth in sakenesse strenght and vertue, in dyde socour
 salut, en foiblesse force et vertue, en crainte refuge
 and in darkenesse lyght and in bataille peas.
 et en tenebres luintere, & en bataille paix. et cetera.
 And lyke wyse as the body may not lyue without that whiche
 Et tout ainsy que le corps ne peult viure sans ce qui
 to hym is necessarie, nother moze nor lesse may not the soule
 luy est necessaire, ne plus ne moins ne peult lame
 by proces of time continewe without her propre nour-
 parduturnite de tēps subsister sans sa pprie nour-
 tinge. For her meate is the dyuine commaundement
 cture, Car la viande est la diuin comandement,
 her drynke is pure prayer, her bath is fastinge
 son beuuerage est oraison pure, sō baing est tūne le-
 trew and right wyse, her clothing almesses
 gitime et droicturiere, ses vestemēts sont aulmosne
 DD de

of her propre goodes, her songe and melody, is the continuall
 De son propre, son chant & melodie est la cōtinuelle
 laude of god, her rest is parfalt pourte,
 louenge de dieu, son repos est parfaite pourte,
 her helth is the sekenes of the body, her socour is pure
 sa sante est la maladie du corps, son refuge est pure
 penaunce, her prae is charite plantifull, wherfore
 penitēce, sa paix est charite habondance, pourquoy
 we ought well to folowe our creatour Jesu
 nous debuons biē ensuiure nostre creatour Jhesu
 Christ, and the saintes fathers whiche haue ben before vs in les
 crist, & les saintz peres qui nous ont precedez en ap
 nre mekenesse of Jesu Christ, deuorion of saynte
 prenant humilite de Jhesu Crist, deuotiō de sainte
 Peter charite of saint Johan, obedience of Abra
 Pierre, charite de saint Jehan, obedience Dabza
 ham, hospitalite of Loth, longe abidyng of Isaac,
 ham, hospitalite de Loth, longanimitie de Isaac,
 sufferance of Jacob, patience of Job, Chastite of Jo
 tollerance de Jacob, paciēs de Job, Chastete de Jo
 seph, costence of Moyses, stedfastnesse of Josue,
 seph, mausuetude de Moysē, constance de, Josue
 Benignite of Samuell, mercy of Dauid, alms
 Benignite de Samuel, misericorde de Dauid, aul
 dede of Tobye, abstinence of Daniell, speculation
 moine de Tobie, abstinence de Daniel, theoricque
 of Hely, experience of saynt Paule, penaunce sorow
 de Helie, practique de saint Pol, penitence laci
 full of Mary Magdalene, pure confessyon
 crimeuse de Marie Magdaleine, pure confessyon
 of the thefe, martyrdome of saynt Stephane, and liberalite of
 du laron, martire de saint Estienne, et liberalite de
 saint Laurence, ye may se ryght noble lady, all that I
 saint Laurens: Vella tresnoble dame tout ce que
 haue founde, so well of the soule reasonable as of the
 lay peu trouuer tant de laine raisonnable come de la
 begetable and sensetive, howbest that I haue here tou
 begetable & sensetive, combien que nay icy rien tou
 ched nothng but the out syde. For I to you dare well say, that
 che sinō la superficiele, car ie vous ose bien dire que
 chel

every worde here both comprhende a great boke in his
 chescune parolle icy compzēt vng grant liure en sa
 declaration, ^{trusting that whiche rudely} I have here patte
 declaracion, esperāt que ce q̄ rudement iay icy mis
 in termes, ^{Maibe occasion that in tyme to come,} ye ^{Maibe}
 en termes sera occasiō q̄ ou tēps aduenir vo^s seres
 moued ^{for to seeke the remenunt,} ^{payenge the swete}
 instiguer de p̄scruter le deimourāt, p̄iāt le doulc
 Iesus, ^{that it be to the honour of god and to the helth of poure}
 Ihes^s q̄ ce soit a lhōneur de dieu et au salut de vo^s
 soule. ^{God graunt that so may it happen.}
 Ore ame. Ma. Dieu veulle q̄ ainsi puisse aduenir.
 Amen.

COther cōmunicacion betwene the lady Mary
 and her dinner, of the exposition of the masse, for in-
 troduct ion in the frenche tonge.

I have good memory ^{maister} ^{dinner}
Mary. Iay bonne meinoire monsieur Lau.
^{how ye} ^{sayde} ^{one} ^{day that we oughte}
 comēt vous disiez vng iour que ne debuons
 nat ^{to pray} ^{at masse,} ^{but rather onely} ^{to here and}
 poit ozer ne p̄ier a la messe, ains seullement ouir et
 harken, and d̄yd proue it ^{by that that one saye communely}
 accouter, et le prouuez par ce quon dit comunement
 I go ^{here} ^{masse,} ^{whiche my lord} ^{the president}
 Je men boy ouir messe ce que monsieur le p̄sident
 fortifenge, ^{sayd that we be nat} ^{bounde} ^{to the}
 corroboreoit, disāt q̄ ne sōmes point obliges par la
 lawe to say, ^{but} ^{onely} ^{to here,} ^{Is it nat} ^{trewe:}
 loy de dire, mais seullement d̄ouir, nest il pas braye
 ye ^{verely} ^{madame:} ^{wherfore} ^{than} ^{say the}
 Lau. Doy certes madame. Ma. Pourq. d̄ōr̄s dis
 the p̄est ^{after the offitoye} ^{in him r̄ouenng to the people}
 le p̄estre ap̄s l'offertoire en soit tournāt au peuple,
 pray for me. ^{And our lord at his passion saide to his disci-}
 p̄es po^t moy. &c. Et n̄re s^r. a la passiō disoit a les disci-
 p̄les, ^{watch and pray,} ^{that ye entre not in temptacion,} ^{with}
 euples, veilles & ozes, assi q̄ n̄tres en tēptatiō avec
^{that that if our lord wolde not our prayers,} ^{why had he made the}
 ce q̄ sy n̄re. ne voullout nosperez po^t q. eust il fait le
 •Dd.ii. p̄t n̄.

Certainely ^{that whiche I shewed you}
 p^r n^r. Lau. Certainemēt madame ce q^{uo} vo^{us} disoit,
 was not onely, but for to shew you how
 nestoit seulement que pour vous monstret comēt
 you ought to mainteine you at the masse, specially
 vous vous debues contenir a la messe, especialle-
 unto that that one mōy the pour for to pray
 nient iusques a ce quon vous admoneste de prier:
 In my god I can not se what we shall do
 Ma. En mon Dieu ie ne puis veoir q^{uo} nous ferons
 at the masse if we pray not No
 a la messe se nous ne p^rions. Lau. Non madame.
 No trewly. ye shall thinke to the mystery
 Ma. Non certes. Lau. Vous penseres au mystere
 of the masse and shall herken the wordes that the prestre
 de la messe et accouteres les parolles que le prestre
 say. yee, and what shall do they whiche vnderstande
 dit. Ma. Voir, et que feront ceulz q^{uo} point ne len-
 it nat, they shall beholde, and shall here and
 tendent. Lau. Ilz regarderont, et accouteront, et
 theynke, and by that they shall vnderstande, I pray
 penseront, et par ce lentenderont. Ma. Je vous
 pour good spy tell me what they shall theynke, so
 prie beau sire dictes moy aquoy ilz penseront affin
 that I may se where lyeth that, that ye tell me.
 que puisse veoir ou gist ce que me dictes. Lau. Je
 shall shewe it you of good herte but if it please
 le vous diray de bon cœur madame, mais sil vo^{us}
 you. it shalbe at supper, for your dinner
 vient a plaisir ce sera a soupper, car vostre disner
 is ended. well at soupper be it.
 est acheue. Ma. Bien a soupper soit.

Cōmunication at souper to this purpose

Now maister amener I haue herd
 M^{ay}try. Or sus monstier Lamosiner iay ouy
 say that promysse is dette. Trewly
 dire que promesse est debte. Lau. Certes
 it is trew, specially of the mouth of a
 madame il est certain especiallement de bouche de
 fidel,

faithfull man Do ye nat holde you for such. Ye verelye
fid. el. Ma. Ne vous tenes pas itel. Lau. Sy sap
 Now acquitte you than
certes madame. Ma. Or vous acquittes donques
 and kepe promis, for to kepe promis commeth of noblesse
et tenes promesse, car tenir pinesse viét de noblesse
 well, sith it is so that ye do commaunde it, it shall
Lau. Bien puis quailq est q le comandes, il vous
 please you to know that the masse is the testament, the whiche
plaira scauoir que la messe est le testament, le quel
 our lord made before his deth
nostre seigneur Jhesu Chrtst fist deuant sa mort
 and passion, whiche is none other thinge (as ye well knowe)
et passion, que nest aultre chose (come bien scaues)
 but the laste will of a parson, touchynge the
que la barntere boullente dune parson, quant a la
 disposition of his goodnes after his deth, wherefore
Disposition de ses biens appres sa mort, pourquoy
 our lord wyllynge to dye for the humaine
nostre seigneur boullant mourir pour lhumain le
 kindred, dyd ordaine that his precious bodye shulde be put
gnage ordonna que son pzeieuz corps seroit intz
 to death for our synnes, in memozy and witnesse
a mort pour no^r peches, in memoire et tiesmoing
 therof he lefte vs and ordained vs the sacrament of the aul-
de quoy il no^r laissa & ordonna le sacrement de lau
 ter in remembraunce of his saide passion, to the ende that ete
tel encomemoration de sa dicte passion affin q ches
 ry one whiche shall belue in the said mistery, that is to know
cun que croira ou deuant dit mistere, cest a scauoir
 in his incarnation, passyon, and resurrection represent
en son incarnation, passion, & resurrexton repzelétez
 in the foresaide sacrament shuld be made partence of the
ou deuant dit sacrament seroit fait participant du
 merite of the same, which is our redemption: Now it is so
merite dicelle q est nostre redempcton. Or est il ain
 that we may make no greater honour to god than
sy que ne pouos faire plus grand hōneur a dieu q
 to cōymat him trewe where as he is trewe lyfe. no^r greater
lestimer veritable (la ou il est vray verite) ne plus
 grand

dishonour than to impute hym ^{he hath left vs}
grād deshonueur q̄ de le mescroire, il nous a laisse
 the laide sacrament, by way of Testament, to the ende that
le dīt sacremēt, par maniere de testamēt, assi q̄ vng
 every one of vs may be proued by his sayth. For so muche as
chescun de no^r soit prouue p̄ la foy, Car au tant q̄
 the parsonne beleued, so muche she shall receyue. The masse han
la p̄sonne croyt, tant elle recchoit. La messe dōcque
 is a cherisunge of his glorious passion, in the whiche
est recapitulation de sa glozieuse passion en la q̄lle
 lyeth the remission of synnes, and where one ought to seue
gist la remission des pechez, & la ou on la doit cer
 it, and not els where, for the gpying remysyon
cher & nō ailleurs car le ^{donnant remission}
 both easy and approue the repentaunce and contrition of the
ratiffie & approue la compūccion et cōtricion du
 synner, ashyng pardon by the merite of the said passion
pecheur demādat p̄don par le merite dicelle passiō
 the whiche is not gotten in angre agaynst
la quelle ne saquiert pas en ce courrouceāt encōtre
 Anna, Caiphas, Pilate Herode, and the tourmentours whi
Anne, Caiphe, Pilate, Herode, et Satellites qui
 che did put our lord to deathe, and to be sorowful
mettent nostre seigneur a mort, et desire desplaisāt
 that our lord hath so muche suffred for vs, rather it
q̄ n̄re seigneur a tant souffert pour nous, ains est
 is all the contrary, for he is defended, where he said daughter
tout le contraire, car il le defendist, ou il dist fille
 of Jerusalem wepe not vpon me, but rather vpon you
de Jherlm ne plourez point sur moy, mais sur vous
 and vpon your chyldren, as he wolde haue sayde, ye and they ben
et sur vo^r enfāns cōe si boulsū dere, vo^r & eulz sōt
 cause of my deeth. for I dye in satisfaccion of your
cause de ma mort, car ie meurs en satisfacciō de vo^r
 synnes. In approbation of the whiche our mother holp cure
pechez. En approbacion de quoy n̄re mere fait egli
 che make myth & her reioyse in such wise, that she is not a ferde
se exulte & se resiouist tellement quelle ne craid poit
 to say, O happy synne, which hath deserved such a redemce
a dire. O heureulz pechez q̄ a merite tel redēpteur
 gloire

pe, and that moze is, Mr doth call the crosse swete, and
 Voire, & que plus est, elle appelle la croix douce &
 the nayles the whiche were right swete for vs, but
 les clouz lesquels fuerent bien douz po' no' mais
 not for hym, for they hym peeced his glorious
 non mie po' luy, car ilz luy percerent les glozeus
 fete and hande, in wedpyng his sacred and blessed
 piedz, & mains, en respandant son tressacre & benoit
 bloude, with inestimable paine and sorowe, we shall
 sang, avec iesttinable paine & douleur. Nous lais-
 leaue here tyll to morowe or an other tyme, if it so
 seros top iusqs a demai ou vne aultressois sy aisp
 please to your godd grace. The pleasure of god
 plaist a bte bonne grace. Ma. Le plaisir de dieu
 be done mayster Amner the whiche will re-
 soit, monsieur Laumosnier le quel vo' veulle re-
 warde you of your good wordes.
 muner de vous beaulz dis. &c.

CThe remenaunte of the saide communycation,
 whyche is of the ceremonyes of the
 masse, for introduction in
 the sayd tonge.

Your hignes was won here
Ameiner. Voire celsitude souloit par
 before to begynne alteration betwene vs
 cy deuiat comencer laltercation entre no'
 twayne, but because that I se you sadde and heuy
 deur, mais pource que vous voy pensue & remise
 more than ye haue of custome, I shall inhardishe and put
 plus q' naues de coustome, ie meharderay & inge-
 me in please at this tyme to moue you and prouoke to
 rap a ceste fois de vous instiguer & prouocquer a
 wyllyng to here the exposition of the cerimonies of the masse.
 vaulloit ouir l'expositio des cerimoniez de la messe
 Ma.

without faulte.

ye shall do scrupce

agrees

Ma. Infalliblement vous me ferez service agrea-
ble, wherfoze ^{beginne} when ye shall thinke best.
ble, pourquoy comences quant bon vous sēblera,
^{I suppose} that ^{your} hath not forgotten
Lau. Je suppose que vostre grace na poit oublie
that which here befoze I haue shewed you of the masse, wher-
ce que par cy deuant vous ay dit de la messe, pour
foze in proceeding further, it is rewe that the
quoy en procedant plus oultre, il est bien vray q̄ le
cloth of the first lyncne that the priest put vpon his
voille ou la premier lige que le prestre met sur la
head in making hi redy at the masse, doth signifie the cloth wherof
teste en se preparāt a la messe, signifie le drap dont
our lord had his epen binded, when the tor-
mentours geuynge him blowes dyd say
tellites luy donant des buffes & soufflets disoient
prophety who hath stroke the. Than he put on the aube whete
prophetise qui ta frappe. Puis il veste laube blāce
that signifie the gowne whiche gaue him reputing
que signifie la robbe q̄ Herode luy dōna lestimant
him a sole, because that he being in his presence wold nat
fol, pour ce que luy esteāt en la p̄sence ne boullut
do some miracle. We do signifie also that so well
faire aucun miracle. Elle signifie ausy que sy biē
the heret of the masse as the sayer ought to be
lauditur de la messe come le discur, doibuent estre
chaste, or they be not worthy to be to such misteries,
chaste, ou il ne sont poit dignes destre a tel mistere
the gyrdell lykewise signifie chastite for our
la chaiture pareillemēt signifie chastete, car nostre
lord in apperinge to his prophetes was wonte to say
seigneur en apparoisant a ses prophetes seult dire
Gyrd thy raines as a man, for the vertu of
Chains tes rains, come vng hōme, car la vertu de
the man lyeth in his raines, than the stole that he put aboute his
l'hōe gist ez rains, puis lestolle q̄ met entour de son
nicke and of his body, signifyeth the corde wherof his p̄cep-
col et de son corps signifie la corde, dont son p̄cep-
sus

clous body was tyed to the pylar by pylate the manipu-
 cious corps fust lie au pilier p Dilate le manipu-
 le doth signifie the same wherof his precious handes were bounde
 le signifie celle dōt les precieuses mains furēt leez
 and the chasuble doth repesente the pylar and the croise cha p pa
 et le chasuble repesente le pilier & la croix que Di-
 late dyd charge vpon his precious holders after that
 late luy chargea sur ses espaules pteuses appres
 he had iudged hym to be for vs crucified. That after
 lauoit iuges destre pour nous crucifies. Puis ap-
 in lyke maner as in deynge the same croise
 pres ne plus ne moins come en portant icelle croix
 he went to his deth and passion, in lyke wyse come the pres
 el alloit a la mort et passion, tout ainly vient le pre-
 est for to begynne the memozy of the same in hym
 stre pour commencer la remembzance dicell, en se-
 like wyse prayng to vs, where as prayenge to god
 pmiertment confessant a nous, la ou priant dieu
 cosbe wyllenge hym to forgyue, we confesse vs to
 luy vouloit pardonner, nous nous confessons a
 hym lyke wyse, the whiche prayenge for vs
 luy pareillement, le quell priant pour nous, nous
 doth gyue vs absolucion, than goeth he to the aultre. I haue
 dōne absolucion, puis sen va a lautel. &c. Je vous
 declared to you the signification of the raymentes belon-
 ap declarez les significances des abillemētz appar-
 gnyng to the seruice of the masse, vnto the introite
 tenant aux seruice de la messe, iusques a lintroite
 of the same, the which with the ouerplus shalbe to you declared
 dicelle, le quel avec le sourplus vo^r sera epilogue
 an other tyme at your good pleasure and commaunde-
 yng aultre fois a vostre bon plaisir & commande-
 ment, I praye therto mayster Amene
 ment. Ma. Je my accorde monsieur Laumosner
 thankyng you with all my harte of your good
 vous remerciant de tout mō coeur de vostre bonne
 traicte. To good and honour may it toerne to
 doctrine. Lau. Abien et hōneur vous puiſt il tous
 pou madame.
 net madame.

Finis.

Ce

Ano

Another coicacion, where dyuers maner metes
ben named, whiche is a ryghte necessary waye for
shortely to come to the frenche speche, betwene the
lady Mary and her Amener.

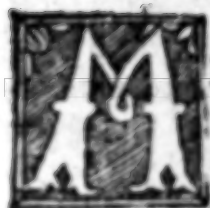


Lady. Good do it you madame.
Au. Bon pzeu vous face madame
pe be well come maistre Amener.
Ma. Biè soiez venu mōsieur Lau
ner: what: is it so late
mosnier Lau. Cōment est il sy tard
trawly I thought not that the boye was covered
certez ie ne cuidoye point que la table fust couuerte
nor the cloth: layde, and ye haue already eaten pour
ne la nappe mise, et vous auez desia menge vostre
porage. Howe knowe ye the same, parauenture
Ma. Comment le scauez vous, peult estre
that I haue nat. It is well possible, howe be it that
que non ay. **Lau.** Il est bien possible combien que
I wolde perswade you to eate of it somewhat.
vous bouldoye parsuader den mēger quelque pe
why I pray you. Because
est. **Ma.** Pourquoy ie vous prie. **Lau.** Pour ce
that phisicians ben of opinion that one ought to begynne
que les medecins sont d'opinion qu'on doit comē
the meate of viayle to chynge that by
cer le menger de viandes liquides, afin de par ce
that meane to gyue direction, to the remenant Howe
moien donner direccion au surplus. **Ma.** Comēt
are ye a phisicon. I thought that ye had ben a
estes vous medecin, ie cuidoye que vous fusses le
lawer. Cretwely men ben wont to say euer y
gist. **Lau.** Certes madame, ou seult dire vng ches
man to be a phisicion, but he that is syche. And ye
cun estre medecin sy non le malade. **Ma.** Et vous
be not syche, wherfore ye haue con-
nestez point malade, pourquoy vous vo'estes con
cluded you a phisicion, declare me therfore the qualitties and
cloud medecin declarez moy donchs les qualittes
pro-

properties of these meates, that I may knowe the which
 pprietes de ces viande q puisse congnoistre lesq
 ben moost holsonr forme, and I shall shewe youe
 les sont les plus saine po' quoy, & iaprouueray v're
 phisicke. *Letaphy madame, I shall shewe you glad*
 inedicine. *Au. Certes madame ie vous en diray*
 lpe all that I can I haue tolde you already myuz
 boullentier ce que ien scay, ie vo' ay desia dit mou
 aduise of the poage, and touching the beste I do estimat him of
 aduis du potage, & touchât le beuf ie l'estime de na
 ture melancolyke: and engendre and produce grosse bloude
 ture melancolyque et engedre & produit gros sang
 will nourishing folkes and of strong complexion
 bien nourrissant gens robustes & de forte coplexion
 welche occupy them in great busynesse and payne. *The mo*
 Qui se exercent en grand trauaill & labours: *Le mou*
 con boyle, is of nature and complexion sanguine the
 con bouilly est de nature & coplexion sanguine leq
 welche to my iugement is holsonr for pour grace *Capons*
 a mon iugemēt est sain pour v're grace: *Chappōs*
 bepled and chaps, ben lykewise of good nou
 boullis & poucins sont semblablemēt de bone nour
 turing, and do h ingeder good blode, but whan they ben co
 riture & engedren bon sang, mais quāt ilz sont ro
 stid, they ben somewhat more coloryke, and all ma
 tris, ilz sont yng tantet plus colericqs et toute ma
 nre of meates rostid, the more, the tother lesse.
 nieres de viandes rosties lune plus laultre mains;
 And all foules and bydes of water, as ben
 Et toutz volatiles & oyseaulz de riuieres, cōe sōt
 swannes, geese, mallards, trales, herons, bytters, and
 Cignes, oies, malartz, cercelies, hairōs, butoys, et
 all such bydes ben of nature melancolyke lesse
 tous telz oyseaulz sōt de nature melancolicqs, mais
 neuertheless rostid than boyled. And conys, hare, rabbits
 toutesfoies rostis q boullis: Et conis, lieures, lap
 res, buckes, dres hartes, bydes, robukes, or leys.
 Aus, dais, daies, cerfs, biches, cheureus, ou saillāt
 holde also all of melancoly. But of all meates
 tiēent aussy to' de melēcolie, mais de toutz viādz
 Et. ii. la

the best and moſt viſſe to the body of man is of eaſe
 la miellure & plus viſſe a corps homai, eſt de chap
 pons, ^{chuyons, faſſantes, partriches, & ponge partriches}
 pons, poucins, faſſans, perdois, perdoiaus, plon-
^{quailles, ſutres, wodecoches, turtell}
 uiers, pigeons, calles, becasses, bidecors, tourtes-
^{dours, kuyghes ſtates ſparowes or}
 relles, cheualiers, eſtoineaux, moisſons, ou paſ-
^{ſinches golde ſinches}
 ſeriaux, pinchons, berdiſtes, frions, cardinotes,
^{chuyſe ſeldefare, and all kyndes of ſmall}
 linotes, maluis, griuis, et toutes eſpeces de petis
^{kyndes wherof the names ben without nombre ben mea-}
 oſelets (deſquelz les noms ſont infinitz) ſont bian-
^{tes noneiſſynge and of liſel digeſtion, and that engens}
 des nourrissantes et de facile digeſtion, & qui engē
^{de good blode, how beſt that in Spayne and in France}
 dent bon ſang cōbien quen Eſpaigne et en France
^{the uſe of ſuche meates is moze to be commended than}
 l'usage de cel viandes eſt plus comendable que le
 ours. ^{why I praye you haue we not}
 noſtre. Ma. Pourquoy ie vous prie, n'auons nous
^{haboundaunce of ſuch game in this realme as they haue there}
 pas plente de cel gibier en ce roialme cō ilz ont la
^{ye forſothe madame, but we do not}
 Lau. Sy auons certes madame mais nous nen
^{uſe it ſo well, for they begynne alwayes}
 vſons point ſy bien, car ilz comencent tousiours
^{with the beſt and ende with the moſt groſſe whiche they leaue}
 la meillure et finent a la plus groſſe quilz laiſſent
^{for the ſeruauntes wher as we do all the con-}
 pour lez ſeruitures la ou nous faiſons tout le co-
^{trary. If it pleaſe to your grace we ſhall}
 traire et cetera. Sil plaist a voſtre grace nous ſe-
^{make ende of our communication vnto ſoups}
 rons fin de noſtre communication, iuſques a ſoups-
^{per at the whiche if ye thinke beſt. we ſhall make an ende.}
 per auquel ſe bon vous ſemble, no^r paracheurōs
^{ſo be it as ye will.}
 Ma. Ainſy ſoit come le voullē.

C The communication at souper.



M Do ye remember **maister** **Ames**
Arp. Vous souuient il monsieur Lau-
 ner that ye haue not yet satisfied

mosnier que naues pas encoze satisfai
 of the complexions and properties of meates

Des complexions & nature de viandes

the which ye haue begonue, and nat finished. **Crowly**

que vous aues entameez, & nō acheueez. Lau **Cer**

madame ye haue reason, wherfore in fulfyl

tes in **adame** vo^r auez rayson, pourquoy en accom

plng that whiche I haue begon, I do warne you that

plissant ce que iay encoinnence ie vo^r aduertis que

all maner meates sodden, what soeuer it be,

touttes viandes bouilliez quelles quelles soiēt, ti

holde more of the ayre, & of the water, which ben two elemen

ennent plus de lait, & de leau (que sont deulx elemē

tes, wherof doth come and springe blode and fleame, vi

tz dout procedant & pullusent sang & fleugine. **Nē**

derstande not neuerthelesse, but all maner of meate holde

tendes pas toutelsois que touttes viandes ne tien

of the four complexions, the one more and the

nent des quatre complexions, les vnes plus & aul

other lesse. For I be well enformed, the complexion

tres moins, car se ie suis bien aduertyp la complert

of thinges take denomination of the qualites prin

on des choses pzent denoiation de la qualyte prin

cipall dominant in the same, than they do of the other

cipalle domināt en icelle) quelle ne fōt des aultres

wayne. But of all maner of meate, the moost daungerous

deux. mais de toutes viandes la plus dāgereusē

is that whiche is of fruites as Cherres smal cherise,

est celle de fruitz crudz, come Cherises, guingues,

greate cherise, strauberis, fryberis, mulberis

gascongnes, freses, framboises, mours, cornelles

prunes, chesayne nuttes, sylberdes, walnuttes,

prunes, chastaignes, nois franches, grosses nois,

ceruyse medlers, aples, peres, perches, melons

cerues, melles, pommes, poires, pesches, melons,

Ce. lii.

cou

And al other kyndes of frutes, howe
 coucombres, & toutes aultres especes de fruits, ia
 beir that pouth, bycause of heate and moistnesse, both by
 soit q ieunesse a cause de challeur & moisteur les di
 gest them better than age dothe. How mai
 gere mieulz que viellesse ne fait. Ma. Comment mō
 steur Amencer, this meate that we do eate
 sieur Laumosnier ces viandes que nous mēgeōs
 do they engendre the blode, I thought that we had our
 engendrent elles le sang, ie cuydoie que nous eussē
 blode from our bythe Crwly
 ons nostre sang des nostre naissance. Lau. Verita
 madame so haue we, but we do no
 blement madame sy auōs nous, mais nous le nou
 rrythe hym and encrease of mate. For as a philoso
 rissons et encroissōs des viādes, car come dit vng
 pher sayth such as the mete is, such is the blode.
 philosophe quelles sont les viandes, tel est le sãg,
 and such as the blode is, such is the spirite, and such as the spirit is
 et quel est le sang, tel est le spirit, quel est le spirit,
 such is the wyt, and such as the wyt is, such is the reason
 tel est le sens, et quel est le sens, telle est la rayson,
 wherfore ye se clerly that the good
 pourquoy vo^r votez manifestimēt que la bonne vi
 mete cause the good vnderstandynge and good reason holde
 ande faict le bon entendemēt & bonne rayso, tenes
 you than to the beste, and take nat to moche therof
 vo^r doncq̃s a la meillieure, & nen prenez pas trop.
 In my god I wene that my phisition whan
 Ma. En mon dieu ie cuide q̃ mon medecin quant
 I shall haue one shall scante mende your reasons.
 en auray vng pouloza a paine amēder vo^r raisōs
 wherfore I pray you to procede, that I may knowe
 pourquoy ie vo^r prie d̃ pceder, q̃ puisse cōgnoistre
 my complexion. If it please you madame
 ma cōplexion. Lau. Sil vo^r viēt a plaisir madāe
 we shall abyde yll another tyme, because that your
 no^r differerōs iusq̃s a vne aultre fois, po^rce q̃ v^re
 supper is almoste ended well, to morrow: do it.
 soupper est qualy acheue. Ma. biē a demain soit.

¶ The ende of this collocation. Ma

Cerwly mapster

Amener.

I thinke

Mary. Certes monsieur Laumosnier, il me
it longe to heare the ende of our begonne
tarde douir la fin de nostre encoinnencee
communication.

In good soth madame,

I am

comunication. Lau. En verite inadame ie suis

redy to acquyte me, howbeit that I make protestation before

prest de me acquicter, combien q̄ ie proteste devant

pour grace that I shall speke thereof as a clerke of armes

vostre grace q̄ ien parleray cōe vng clerc darmes

for I knowe nothing of it but by here say: well

car ie nen scay rien que par ouir dire. Ma. Bien

well, care ye a not. It is trouth madame

bien, ne vous chaille. Lau. Il est bien vray mada-

that there is fourre elementes, that is to saye

The earth,

me q̄ sunt quatre elementz, cest a scauoir. La terre

the water, thayre, & the fire, the whiche haue eche one a qualitie

leau, lair, & le feu, lesquels ont chescun vne qualite

proper, and one folowynge The erthe is drie of her pro-

prie et vne cōcomitāte, la terre est seiche d̄ sa pro-

per qualitie, and colde by nature folowynge, the whiche

prie qualite, & froide p nature cōcomitāte, la quelle

cometh of the water, that to her is nigh. The water is colde

viēt de leau quiluy est prouchayne, leau est froide

of his proprietie but for the neighbourhode that he hath of the

de sa propriete, mais par la contiguite quelle a de

ayre, he is moist, the ayre of his proper qualitie is moist

lair, elle est moiste, lair de sa prie qualite est moiste

but by the concordance that he hath to the fyre he is hote,

mais par la simbolisacion q̄l a ou feu, il est chault

The fyre is hote of his prie nature and drie by the erthe, to

le feu est chault d̄ sa prie nature & sec par la terre a

the whiche he is very nigh: Of the whiche fourre qualy

laquelle il est cōcomitant, desquelles quatre qualy

ties naturall and folowynge to the springe to be fourre

tes naturelles & cōcominantes nous resoltēt qua-

complaxions, For of heate doth springe the colerike,

tre cōplexions, car de challeur pululle colericque

whiche is hote and drie. Of moynesse is sayde the sanguine

qui est chault et sec, de humilite est dit sanguine

chault

hoote and moiste. Of colde the flumatyke, colde
chault & moiste, de froydure, le flegmâtique froit
and moiste. Of drynesse the melancolyke, colde and drye.
& moiste, de seicheur, le melancolicque froit & sec.

Crewly yf I haue well remembred, ye haue sayde here
Ma. Certes le say bien retenu vous aues dict cy
about, that all thynges elemented haue all the
dessus que toutes choses elementees ont toute les
four complexions.

There is nothing moze trewe
quatre complexions. **Lau.** Il nest riens plus vray
madame. • Chan haue I four complexi

madame. **Ma.** doncques ay ie quatre comp lexi-
ons. It is so, but as I haue sayde to you here

ons. **Lau.** Il est ainsy, mais come ie vous ay dit cy
before they take euer the denomination of the
deuant, on pzent tousiours la donomination de la
qualitie principall and haupnge dominion.

Of what
qualite principale et dominante. **Ma.** Dequelle
complexion do ye take me by your sayth, In

complexion me dictez vo^r par vostre foy. **Lau.** En
good sayth madame of the best. Ma.

bonne foy madame de la meilleure. **Mary.** **Ma,**
beware of flattery for howebest that I am yonge

gardes vo^r dadulation, car combien que soit ie u-
of yeres, yet haue I harde say neuerthelesse, that euer

ne de ans, sy ay ie ouy dire touttesfois, que chescū
body hath a frend, that dare him shewe his fautes, saue prin-

a vng amy qui luy ose dire les fautes, sy non prin-
ces and princesses, for the most parte dothe synge of Placebo,

ces et princesses, car la pluspart iouent de Place-
and fewe of dilexi Crewlye madame pour

bo, & bien peu de dilexi. **Lau.** Certes madame v^re
reason is good and trewe, notwithstandinge all flattery

rayso est bone et braye, nō obstant toute adulation
and adulation sette a syde. I haue sayd the truth. for to the re-

et flaterie ariere mise, say dit la verite, car au re-
poste of any conning man ye haue complexion

port de tout homme scauant vo^r aues complexion
sanguine, whiche is the best of the four, because that the

sanguine, q est meilleure des quatre, a cause q les
autres

others holden more of extremities, for in hete and
 aultres tiennēt plus d'extremities, car en chaleur &
 moïsture lyeth the lyfe of man and the more that he be
 moïsteur gist la vie de l'home, et quāt plus quel de-
 cline to coldnesse and drynesse whiche ben diametrally
 cline a froideur et seicheur, q̄ sont diametrallemēt
 opposite and contrary to hete and moïsture, the more
 opposite et contraire a chaleur et moïsture, tāt pl⁹
 he goeth to corruption, which is the deth. I myght proue
 il ba a corruption q̄ est la mort, ie vous poulroie
 to you by reason vnpossible to withstande that
 prouuer par irrefragable et solidis oppiniōs que
 this your complexion is the best, but for nat
 ceste v^{re} complexion ē la mielleur, mais pour non
 to be tedious nor mal pleasant, I remytte to an other
 estre tides ne facheus, ie le reiectez a vne aultre
 tyme. Forsoth it displease me that my dyner is
 fois. Ma. Certes il me desplaist q̄ mon disner est
 cude for I haue taken great pleasure to your communication
 acheue, car iay priens grād plaisir a v^{re} coicacion
 and how be it that my body is sufficiently sated and fedde
 et cōbien q̄ mon corps est suffisānt resocillē et re-
 pet remayne my soule neuertheless hongry and full
 pus sy demeure mō aine touttefois fainilleuse & e
 of appetite of such meates as ye haue here administred.
 furiente de telle viandes que luy auēs administre
 In good trewth I do reioyse me to se you
 La. En bōe verite madame ie me resiouis de veoir
 grace so inclined and disposed to be willinge to knowe a
 v^{re} grace tāt propōse & pcline a boulloir scauoir &
 can, wherefore I shall be glad to fulfill your
 cognoistre, po' quoy ie seray ioteulz d'accōplir v^{re}
 good wll where it shall please you to commaunde me:
 boulloir la ou vo⁹ plaica me comander. Ma. Je
 praye to god to reward you of your labour and good in-
 pte a dieu vo⁹ remunerer de v^{re} paine & bōne doc-
 trine monseigneur. Amen. God preserve you
 trine monseigneur. Lau. Dieu vo⁹ main-
 in all good prosperite.
 teigne ent toutte bonne p⁹perite madame. Amen.

La

The diuision of tyme.



DE Atomos ben made the momentes,
Es Atomos se fōt les momētes
 of momentes ben made the minutes,
 Des momentes se font les minu-
 tes, of minutes ben made the de-
 grees, Of degrees the quarters
 gres. Des degres les quartz,
 of heures, of quarters of heures the
 dheures, Des quart. dheures les
 halfe heures, of halfe heures the heures. Of
 dempe heures, Des demp heures les heures, Des
 the heures the dayes and the nyghtes, of the whiche ben
 heures les iours et les nuitz desquelles se font les
 made weekes, of weekes the monthes, of the monthes
 sepinaines, Des sepinaines les mois, Des mois les
 the foure tymes of the pere, whiche ben, The springe, sommer, har-
 quatre temps de lan, qui sont Printemps, este, au-
 nest, and wynter. Of the foure tymes ben made the peres.
 tunne, et iuer, Des quatre temps se font les ans,
 of peres ben made, the whiche last foure peres, and lustre syue. Of la
 Des ans se font les Olimpiades, et lustres, Des lu-
 stres ben made the syxtene peres of ben made
 stres se font les Judicions, Des iudicions se font
 the .C. peres. Of ben made the tyme, whiche is sayde
 les Siecles, Des siecles se fait le temps qui est dict
 a. M. peres. Of is made the tyme, whiche is sayd .xv. thou-
 Euum, De euum se fait le temps qui est dict Par-
 lande peres The tyme is none other thyng, but nombre
 geneses. ¶ Le temps nest aultre chose que nōbz
 of mouyng mouyng is cause of ipse wordly, & ipse
 De mouuement: mouuement est cause de vie, et vie
 & relastynge is our lord Iesu Christ. For who
 pardurable est nostre seigneur Iesu crist: Car qui
 so cuer shall worshyp him and dyead, perpetually in the
 conques Ihonozera et craindza a perpetuite (en la
 lande of Iguers shall lyue.
 terre des viuantz) viura:

This

Thyg letter A, in latyn, is as muche to saye as without, and tomos is diuision, then Atomos is without diuision.

Ye shal note, that atomos is a thing so litel that can not be deuided, as a letter whiche is atomos in grammer, out, is atomos in arismetrye, a pycke is atomos in geometry, and the duste that flieth in the sonne beame ben atomos, and a twynclynge of an ey whiche may be taken here for atomos.

The Grekes were wont to reken by Olympiades, whiche ben foure yeares. The Romains by lusters, whiche ben fyue yeares, & by iudicions that ben made of thye lustres, which ben fyftene yerres, A secle is an hundred yere, and sometime taken for a mannes lyfe. Euum is take lykewise for a mannes age, and for a thousand yerres. And Parigene ses for fyftene thousande yeares, and time is taken for the lastinge of the worlde:

Thus endeth the second and lasse boke of this introduction. Printed at London by
John waley.

